

Christian Myths?

Written by Benjamin Lee Cooper

7th Edition

**Uploaded on the 23rd day of the 1st month of 2024
to <https://learn-hebrew-from-genesis.weebly.com/> and
<https://press.barnesandnoble.com> as a PDF file.**

**"Also of your own selves shall men arise, speaking
perverse things, to draw away disciples after
them." Acts 20:30**

Copyright 2018-2024 by Benjamin Lee Cooper. All rights reserved but some permissions are described later in this book.

Table of Contents

Chapter 1 What is This?.....	13
1.1 Introduction.....	13
1.2 Are you open minded to God?.....	13
1.3 What am I gaining?.....	15
1.4 Formatting.....	15
1.5 Controversy.....	15
1.6 Criticism.....	16
1.7 Disclaimers.....	16
1.8 Footnotes.....	17
1.9 Religious Disclaimer.....	18
1.10 Study for yourself.....	18
1.11 Context.....	18
1.12 The parables of Jesus.....	18
1.13 Being driven by emotions.....	19
1.14 Who or what has the authority to dictate Christian doctrine?.....	19
1.15 What version of the Bible is correct?.....	20
1.16 What about the history of religions?.....	20
Chapter 2 Forgiveness and sin.....	21
2.1 Should you skip this chapter?.....	21
2.2 The whole picture.....	21
2.3 Shifting the burden.....	22
2.4 Who is our example?.....	23
2.5 What happens to us when we are forgiven?.....	23
2.6 What is sin?.....	23
2.7 When does God forgive us?.....	26
2.8 Is there a punishment for unpaid debts?.....	27
2.9 What about the wayward son?.....	29
2.10 Can we volunteer to forgive?.....	30
2.11 What about all of the verses.....?.....	31
2.12 How many times should we forgive?.....	32
2.13 What about OT forgiveness?.....	32
2.14 What should we do now?.....	33
2.15 False Guilt.....	34
2.16 Hell-fear control.....	34
2.17 Can we pay money to people to be forgiven by God	

and Jesus?.....	35
2.18 The Willful Sin and other Cults.....	36
2.19 When should we confront a person who offended us?.....	37
2.20 What is a freewill offering in the Old Testament?.....	37
2.21 Freewill Offering Comparisons.....	38
2.22 Communion.....	39
2.23 Since drinking blood is wrong, is the Communion a pagan ritual?.....	40
2.24 Is it a sin to be angry?.....	40
2.25 What happened to our sins when Jesus died for us?..	41
2.26 Jesus was without sin or blemish.....	43
2.27 Can Jesus forgive our sins?.....	43
2.28 Binding and Loosing.....	43
2.29 Do I need to be baptized?.....	44
2.30 Can we forgive but also require a payment for damages that were done?.....	45
Chapter 3 Hell and eternity.....	46
3.1 What is Hell?.....	46
3.2 Where does our soul go when our body dies?.....	47
3.3 Are our souls eternal?.....	49
3.4 Will anyone be tortured for ever?.....	50
3.5 What about the gnashing of teeth?.....	52
3.6 What is the lake of fire?.....	53
3.7 What do the parables tell us?.....	54
3.8 Can we lose our salvation?.....	55
3.9 Can we talk to dead people or pray to them?.....	56
3.10 Can we pray for the dead to improve their situation?..	57
3.11 What about Lazarus?.....	57
3.12 Do babies go to heaven or hell?.....	58
3.13 Forty-two.....	60
3.14 What is the meaning of life?.....	60
3.15 Condemnation.....	61
3.16 Is just believing in Jesus enough?.....	62
3.17 Does God forgive those who he puts in the Lake of Fire?.....	63
Chapter 4 The Rapture and 2nd coming.....	64
4.1 You should read all of this chapter.....	64
4.2 What do the parables of Jesus say?.....	64

4.3 Will Jesus really only be in the air when he comes back?	66
4.4 What about the tribulation then?.....	67
4.5 Will satan pretend that the rapture happened?.....	68
4.6 When will Jesus come back?.....	70
Chapter 5 Revelation.....	74
5.1 Do we know it all?.....	74
5.2 The Basics.....	74
5.3 Revelation Theories.....	75
5.4 Are you Angry at God?.....	76
5.5 Is there a seven year tribulation?.....	77
5.6 Buy their stuff?.....	78
Chapter 6 Health.....	79
6.1 Is drinking alcohol a sin?.....	79
6.2 What does the Bible say about alcohol?.....	80
6.3 What health problems can alcohol cause?.....	81
6.4 Is drinking alcohol worth it?.....	81
6.5 What About Smoking?.....	82
6.6 What About Caffeine?.....	82
6.7 Should we shun people who smoke, or drink alcohol or caffeine?.....	83
6.8 what is the origin of 12 step programs?.....	84
6.9 Do I need a 12 step program?.....	84
6.10 What are the success rates of the 12-step programs?..	85
6.11 What are the psychological effects of doing the 12 step program?.....	86
6.12 How can I get better if I don't use the 12-step program?	87
6.13 Should I trust pharmakeia?.....	89
6.14 Should I care about my health?.....	90
6.15 Should I fast?.....	91
6.16 How does God heal us?.....	93
6.17 When does God heal us?.....	95
6.18 Are humans really omnivores?.....	96
6.19 But God said I could eat meat (after sin happened)!...97	
6.20 But didn't Jesus eat fish?.....	97
6.21 Should we take or accept vaccines?.....	98
6.22 What is Grounding?.....	99

6.23 Should I eat dairy products?.....	101
Chapter 7 Judging.....	103
7.1 Don't Judge me bro!.....	103
7.2 What is the myth about?.....	103
7.3 What is discernment?.....	104
7.4 What is Judging?.....	104
7.5 Does the Bible tell us to not judge?.....	105
7.6 Does the Bible tell us to discern?.....	106
7.7 What is the difference?.....	107
7.8 Have We Been Disarmed?.....	107
7.9 What Should We Do?.....	107
Chapter 8 Self-Defense.....	109
8.1 Eye for an Eye.....	109
8.2 What is this about swords in the NT?.....	110
8.3 What about guns?.....	111
Chapter 9 Artifacts and Locations.....	113
9.1 The Grail.....	113
9.2 The Shroud.....	114
9.3 Real artifacts and locations.....	115
9.4 The Garden of Eden.....	116
9.5 The 3rd Temple.....	116
9.6 Revealing of the Ark of the Covenant.....	117
Chapter 10 Shepherds.....	118
10.1 Will you shut up and agree?.....	118
10.2 What is NLP?.....	119
10.3 Papers Please!.....	122
10.4 Obey who?.....	125
10.5 Separation of Church and State.....	127
10.6 Can women lead men?.....	130
Chapter 11 Marriage.....	132
11.1 Does the Bible say we need government permission to get married?.....	132
11.2 Can a person get remarried after a divorce?.....	135
11.3 When does a marriage start in God's eyes?.....	136
11.4 What does the Bible say about weddings?.....	137
11.5 Can we have more than one spouse at the same time?	138
11.6 But what about if a brother dies?.....	139

11.7 Will one be hated and the other loved?.....	140
11.8 What if a man or his wife wants him to have a second wife?.....	141
11.9 Can there be happiness with two wives?.....	141
11.10 Don't be so Jealous! Or should you be?.....	142
11.11 Submission.....	143
11.12 Should I marry a virgin?.....	144
11.13 Can saints marry in the millennium?.....	145
Chapter 12 Sexuality.....	147
12.1 What do you want to hear?.....	147
12.2 Did God destroy Sodom because of homosexuality?.....	150
12.3 Can God move in a homosexual's life?.....	153
12.4 What should we do then?.....	154
12.5 Is sex only for making children?.....	154
12.6 Can a husband and wife commit fornication with each other?.....	155
12.7 When does a fetus become alive?.....	155
12.8 Sodomite in the KJV.....	156
Chapter 13 God's Will.....	158
13.1 In Jesus name.....	158
13.2 What about Sampson?.....	162
13.3 A lesson from Job.....	162
13.4 If we are suffering is it the result of sin?.....	163
13.5 Is every promise in the Bible for me?.....	164
13.6 Should we sell our belongings and give money away?.....	165
Chapter 14 Pentecostalism.....	166
14.1 Speaking in tongues?.....	166
14.2 Is it real?.....	167
14.3 What is real speaking in tongues like?.....	167
14.4 Can a person fake it?.....	169
14.5 Is it for everyone?.....	170
14.6 When should tongues be spoken?.....	170
14.7 Was Pentecost the first time the Holy Spirit came to saints?.....	171
14.8 What are the gifts of the Spirit?.....	171
14.9 What is the Kingdom of Heaven?.....	171

14.10	What is the Kingdom of God?.....	173
14.11	What is tree grafting?.....	174
14.12	Can I join Israel if I am not Jewish?.....	174
14.13	Can I call myself a Jew once I am grafted in?.....	175
Chapter 15	Worship and Prayer.....	177
15.1	Who should we worship?.....	177
15.2	What about saints and Mary?.....	178
15.3	Is Jesus equal to God?.....	179
15.4	Can we also worship with music?.....	180
15.5	What types of worship are there?.....	180
15.6	Who should we pray to?.....	180
15.7	Should we repeat our prayers?.....	181
15.8	Should we use prayer books?.....	182
15.9	How should we pray?.....	182
15.10	Should we pray in Jesus name?.....	183
15.11	What about Luke 14:10?.....	184
Chapter 16	Bible Bashing.....	186
16.1	Zealousness.....	186
16.2	Is debating ok?.....	187
16.3	Who then can convince ignorant people of anything?	187
16.4	What is Spiritual Abuse?.....	188
Chapter 17	Holidays.....	190
17.1	Christmas.....	190
17.2	Birthdays.....	191
17.3	What other holidays are full of pagan traditions?.....	191
17.4	Is it worth it all?.....	192
Chapter 18	The Law.....	193
18.1	Is this topic for me?.....	193
18.2	Does God change with the wind?.....	193
18.3	Did Jesus come to remove laws?.....	193
18.4	What did Jesus change?.....	198
18.5	Did God's Spirit move in the Old Testament?.....	201
18.6	Did miracles happen in the Old Testament?.....	202
18.7	Is it judaizing to keep the Law?.....	202
18.8	Do I need to keep the Law to be saved? (saved by works?).....	203
18.9	Should we go to church on sundays?.....	205

18.10	Should we still stone people?.....	206
18.11	Did God replace or divorce Israel?.....	208
18.12	Modesty.....	208
18.13	Hair.....	208
Chapter 19	Trinity.....	210
19.1	Should you read this chapter?.....	210
19.2	Is there any mention of the trinity in the Old Testament?.....	210
19.3	Who is the Spirit of God?.....	210
19.4	What are the names of the 3 persons?.....	211
19.5	What do the parables say about the 3rd person?.....	212
19.6	What about those 2 trinity verses?.....	212
19.7	What is blaspheming the Holy Spirit?.....	213
19.8	Is Jesus God?.....	216
19.9	What power and authority does Jesus have?.....	216
19.10	Is it ok to bow to Jesus?.....	216
19.11	Should we worship Jesus?.....	217
19.12	What term should I use for the “God-head”?.....	217
19.13	God is our Father, so is Jesus our brother?.....	217
19.14	Blood.....	218
19.15	Joseph further compared.....	218
Chapter 20	What Happened?.....	219
20.1	Can we just blame the Catholic Church?.....	219
20.2	Do we need to know a detailed history of the Church?	219
20.3	What was the Reformation?.....	219
20.4	How did the RCC establish it's control over people?.....	220
20.5	How did the RCC control people?.....	220
Chapter 21	Theories and Off-Topic.....	222
21.1	Will our pets be in heaven? And what about the babies?	222
21.2	Will animals help us when we flee into the 'wilderness'?.....	223
21.3	Can animals “talk”?.....	224
21.4	What about androids, robots, or supercomputers?.....	226
21.5	Will lions be herbivores again?.....	228
21.6	Would there have been overpopulation before sin?.....	229
Chapter 22	Conclusions.....	231

22.1 What now?.....	231
22.2 Freely Given.....	231
22.3 Legal matters.....	231
22.4 My Contact Information.....	232
22.5 My other books.....	232

Chapter 1 What is This?

1.1 Introduction

This book is not meant to pick on or make fun of Christians or any other religion. I am saved and have been since I was five years old. In this book I am going to assume that you have read my book “What is Truth?”. It is not required that you read it, but in that book I cover the major myths like the Aramaic Myth, the Evolution religion, the Nephilim Myth, some denominational issues, and many other topics to help the reader to be able to Trust God's Bible, and to know that it is the truth. If you have not read “What is Truth?”, and you are not sure about the accuracy of the Bible, or which version is best, or if you still believe the Aramaic Myth about the Bible, then I suggest that you read my free book “What is Truth?” before reading this book. So in this book I will assume that you trust God's word, and the accuracy of his Bible, and that you know what version is the best version. The serpent wants Christians to live in fear and ignorance, and many of the myths I am addressing in this book have caused many Christians much stress, fear, sorrow, or has given them false hopes which could lead to big disappointments. Hopefully God can use this book to free at least some Christians from these things while improving their relationship with himself.

1.2 Are you open minded to God?

In order for this book to do you any good, you will need to allow God to show you the truth. I cannot show you the truth. All I can do is show you Bible verses and then you have to be willing to hear from God and ask him if what I am saying is correct. Only God can help you open your mind and show you the truth. As people get older, they get more and more

close minded as they think they have everything figured out. If they do not have an open mind to God, they will suffer many unnecessary things due to their ignorance. This is because knowing the truth can sometimes prevent us from suffering. Some people feel that because they have been in their denomination for so many years, there is not really anything important they can still learn, because they think they know all of the important teachings. In truth, we could read the Bible several times in completion, and still have more to learn by reading it again.

Please pray before you read any further in this book and ask God to show you the truth about the things in this book. If you are not willing to honestly ask God to show you the truth, then I will not be willing to listen to your feedback you might try to send me about this book. If you are not willing to honestly ask God to show you the truth (and any errors) in this book, then I wash my hands of any guilt if I am indeed wrong about some things in this book. You have the duty to at least ask God to show you the truth. If you asked God to show you the truth, and I am wrong about something in this book, then God can make that error known to you, and then I wont have that guilt in this situation either. If anyone skips reading this paragraph and therefore does not see my request to ask God to direct them and show them the truth, then I pray that God frees me of any guilt if one of my topics is wrong in this book. Readers should at least read the introduction of this book before skipping around.

Teachers have a responsibility to teach the truth while being judged by God. This is why I have put some of the burden on you to take responsibility by asking God to show you things and to direct you. If you desire to send me feedback after you read all of this book, then tell me that you also asked God to show you the truth about the topics in this book. If you lie about this, God will be our witness that you lied about talking to him.

[John 8:32](#)

32 And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free.

1.3 What am I gaining?

I didn't want to write this book. I wrote this book because I believe God wanted me to. I did not enjoy writing this book. This is because I know how stubborn and closed minded most people are. I know how people of different denominations and religions like to berate, belittle, rebuke, insult, or do even worse to those who disagree with them or their denomination. All I can think of while I write this book are the hordes of angry people trying to set me straight. This is why my tone in this book may be direct, or stern, or maybe even rude sometimes. Because I know how ignorant and rude most Christians can be once they believe a person believes a 'heresy' or something 'very wrong'.

1.4 Formatting

When I mention a verse but do not quote it, it is my hope that you will read the King James version. I have described the problems with the other translations in my book "What is Truth?". I have numbered the paragraphs in this book in order to make it easier for people to tell me or each other which sections they are talking about when they are complaining about this book or me. Don't say I didn't make it easier for you.

1.5 Controversy

The topics in this book cover doctrines that most christian denominations hold as being true. Because this book challenges those doctrines, I urge anyone who gets offended easily to give this book to somebody else (I hope to eventually have my books printed). If you are offended easily, it is not a good idea for you to read this book. Why get your emotions

worked up? Just so you can try to debate me or yell at me? I used to debate people and God has shown me that debating is a sin. Maybe you want to write a counter argument and tell all of your friends about how wrong I am? Well I guess that is your right to do if you want.

1.6 Criticism

If I truly am wrong about something please pray before you send me a letter or something in an attempt to 'show me the truth'. I have studied these topics well, and I have grown up believing each of these Myths, only to have to find out these truths in this book the hard way. I know I could be wrong about a few things in this book and I honestly want it corrected if there are errors. However, debates are pointless and also a sin in my belief, so please do not try to convert me to your belief if you send me a letter (but if I truly am wrong, show me the Bible verses from the KJV or Hebrew). I used to debate people, I have pretty much heard all of the defenses of these Myths that I cover in this book. And please if you do have positive feedback to give me, then please contact me with that positive feedback (if you also asked God to show you the truth). I probably will not be getting much positive feedback, so positive feedback would help me. Again, I do not wish to discuss or debate topics with anyone who is not willing to ask God to show them the truth before reading this book.

[Romans 1:29](#)

29 Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers,

1.7 Disclaimers

I do not agree with everything on the websites I might put links to in this book. I do not agree with everything the people I might mention in this book teach. So please be very

Careful if you go to the links I put in this book or if you talk to or learn from the people that I mention. Please remember that when I put links in this book or talk about other teachers, I am simply doing it to honor the person who helped lead me to a topic, not necessarily to get you to go listen to everything they say. I may even make an accidental wrong quote of some of the people I mention, or accidentally explain their concepts incorrectly. And if so, then I apologize. Most of these topics in this book come from my own studies and experiences throughout my life. As far as I know, no book or website exists that lists out all of these major Myths that I have listed out.

Most readers will know this but just in case not, if you see underlined text in a verse I put in this book, the [KJV](#) does not have that verse underlined. I underlined it to make sure that text in those verses get special attention.

I am not a doctor, so keep in mind that when I mention medical or health topics in this book, I expect you to do your own research and seek professional advice before making medical or health decisions.

1.8 Footnotes

When I put links or books or video titles after a paragraph I almost always have done research in other locations or used my own ideas or findings also in that paragraph. Therefore, when you see a source that I put at the end of a paragraph, always assume my own work or ideas or other sources exist for that paragraph also. I believe that it makes more sense to have 'footnotes' at the end of a paragraph, instead of at the end of a chapter or at the end of the book. It seems to me that people would be less likely to look at footnotes if they are not near the related text.

1.9 Religious Disclaimer

Any religious or political group mentioned in this book is only for the purpose of showing the errors in doctrine that

they believe while comparing that doctrine to the Bible, and is not meant to say that people of that religion are bad people or any negative thing like that. I will leave it up to God to sort them out.

1.10 Study for yourself

Study the Bible for yourself, Study all matters for yourself. It is wise to learn from a wise teacher but we should filter out the incorrect things they teach by studying the Bible. Don't throw the baby out with the bathwater as the saying goes. Ignore all the obvious nonsense a person teaches and take the truth that they teach and keep it in your heart.

1.11 Context

When I quote scriptures in this book please take the time whenever you get curious or feel led, to read the entire chapters where I mention a verse. This will allow you to keep these topics in context.

1.12 The parables of Jesus

It is amazing how many of the myths that I cover in this book can be cleared up by looking at the parables of Jesus. I believe that most people do not put much value on the parables, or at least when it comes to doctrines. It seems they just view them for their immediate lessons and not for deeper meanings. I have even seen prophetic things in the parables.

1.13 Being driven by emotions

People are driven by their emotions way too often. When they get upset or passionate about a topic or issue, they

often ignore everything else that people are saying or doing, and just focus on that one issue or topic that bothers them or interests them. If we let ourselves be driven only by passion or emotions, we risk becoming delusional or ignorant. Our senses can become diminished and only the one sense we are using is the one that our mind listens to. We might see something horrible, and then we cannot hear what people around us are saying. We might hear something amazing, and then we cannot see the important things in front of us as we are walking by. We need to prevent ourselves from being ruled by emotions. Emotions can be wonderful or helpful at the right times, but when we need to think clearly, decisively, or precisely, then we need to be very careful that our emotions do not prevent us from learning and interpreting the things we need to learn. If you find yourself getting overly emotional while reading this book, please take a break from reading this book for a day, a week, a month, or however long you need. If it becomes too stressful for you, then pray about it and ask God what he wants you to do.

1.14 Who or what has the authority to dictate Christian doctrine?

Only God has the right to say what is and what is not proper 'doctrine', or what are the things that we should believe. This means that only the books that God has inspired as being a true message from himself should be used as sources for what doctrine should and should not be. What books are these? The 66 books of the Bible. This means that the Aporochrypha, the Talmud, the Doctrines and Covenants, the Quran, or any other book that claims to speak for God, or claims to be a part of the Bible, will not be considered as true sources of doctrine in this book. Because the Bible does not give any human on earth the power to dictate God's will, or to supercede over God's desires and commandments, I will not be considering the writings of any Pope, 'Rabbi', Imam, or anyone else, as being true for the

use of establishing what should be Christian doctrine. If you want to know why I believe this way, you can read my free book 'What is Truth?' in which I have covered these other religious books and topics in detail.

1.15 What version of the Bible is correct?

I have answered this question in my book 'What is Truth?', but to answer this question here, I believe that the King James Version (KJV) is the best English version, the best Hebrew version is the Meir Letteris version, and the best Greek New Testament version is the Textus Receptus. All verse I quote in this book will be from the KJV. If you want to know more about these or other versions of the Bible, then perhaps read my free book "What is Truth?".

1.16 What about the history of religions?

Although it can be important for us to know when and how false religious doctrines came about, it is not a main focus of this book to study the history of these doctrines. The main focus of this book is to address the myths themselves, and not how or when they came about. I do know some of the history of these doctrines, but if I were to include all of the history relating to every myth I talk about in this book, it would make this book two or three times longer. I do talk about some of the history regarding the major Bible related religions in my book 'What is Truth?', but I do not focus much on individual religious doctrines in that book.

Chapter 2 Forgiveness and sin

2.1 Should you skip this chapter?

I will explain the myths regarding forgiveness but first I want to say that if you think that unforgiveness is destroying you due to the pain of a physical or emotional injury caused by somebody, to the point that you have to forgive them or you will end up ruining your own life or the lives of those you care about, then you should probably skip this chapter and just focus on forgiving the person who injured you or your loved one, if that is what you think God wants you to do. However, for everyone else, who wants to review the dominant christian beliefs regarding forgiveness, then read on. But do know it is not a sign of weakness if you skip this chapter. This is a serious topic and I do not want to stress anyone out.

2.2 The whole picture

The Old Testament is full of commandments and occurrences that show us that certain things need to be done when somebody hurts us or our loved ones. Even the New Testament has Parables that can help us to understand what to do with the topic of forgiveness. All of these things are crucial for us to know everything we need to know about forgiveness. We should not take just one verse of the Bible and build a doctrine on it. That is how people end up willingly serving the cool-aid that kills their own congregation so that they can all beam up to heaven sooner than other people.....And it is how some leaders control their followers, by twisting just one or two verses into a false doctrine. Furthermore, if we ignore the Old Testament, which Jesus himself often quoted, then we are not being wise. The Old Testament is the foundation for what was written in the New Testament. If this were not so, why would Jesus have quoted so much from the Old Testament? If

this were not so, then why did Jesus need to die for us? Because the Old Testament explains that our blood was required because of our sins, but Jesus took our place. If Jesus could have just made up his own rules and done away with the Old Testament rules, then he wouldn't have needed to die for our sins (and then be resurrected). So during this review of forgiveness in this chapter, we will need to examine the Old Testament also.

2.3 Shifting the burden

As far as I can remember, I have never once heard anyone debunk the forgiveness myth, so I will now. The dominant belief about forgiveness in modern Christianity shifts the burden from the offender, to the victim, at the very start, and the burden stays on the victim the whole time. The offender has virtually no punishment for their offense, and the victim must do all of the work to 'remedy' the situation. I cannot think of a single situation in the Old Testament (OT) or in the New Testament (NT) that give us any hint that this is the right way to do things. The dominant teachings just post NT verses that say we must forgive. Yes, we must forgive, but there is a time to forgive, and there is a time to refuse, and there should be penalties. This is what I will describe in this chapter, but the major point here is that we need to realize that there are penalties for the offender who sins against God (until God decides to remove those penalties), and there are penalties for those who hurt us (unless if we chose to remove those penalties). I will make this more clear soon but each of the parts of this topic must be evaluated in order.

2.4 Who is our example?

Who is our example that we should imitate? Jesus and God right? Didn't Jesus live out and obey all of the commandments that God gave to us? Would he ask us to do

something and then he himself do the opposite thing? Can Jesus do hypocritical things? Didn't he tell the Pharisees that they were hypocrites? Will Jesus be forgiving everyone who has sinned when he judges everyone to see who goes into the lake of fire, and who gets to live eternally with him? Why would Jesus put people in the lake of fire if he forgave them? Does this mean that Jesus does not forgive some people? Who does he forgive and who does he not forgive?

2.5 What happens to us when we are forgiven?

When we are forgiven, what happens to us? Does God still have some kind of mark or symbol on our spirit that shows all of the sins we did even if he forgave those sins? Or when he forgives us is it like he has washed our garments with the blood of Jesus and then our garments are as if they are pure white and clean? [Revelation 7:14](#) says 'And I said unto him, Sir, thou knowest. And he said to me, These are they which came out of great tribulation, and have washed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb.'

[Isaiah 43:25](#) implies that when God forgives sins, he does not recall them anymore. The Hebrew stem ר.מ.ר that is used here for “remember” can all mean “recall”. I do not believe that God is capable of losing his memory or forgetting something. But I believe he can ignore something or choose to not recall it.

2.6 What is sin?

What is sin? Many people would repeat the fancy analogy that they learned from dictionaries, concordances, pastors, and other places of 'authority'. This analogy is of an archer shooting an arrow and missing the mark on the target that they are shooting at. Is this an accurate analogy? No. First, H2398 of Strong's has only one use as “miss”. The other 237

times are “sin”, “offend” or other translations. 196 occurrences are either “sin” or “sinner”. A typical target that we might have in our mind when we might think of an archer shooting an arrow at a target would have different zones on it for different scores that an archer could achieve. Essentially, if the archer missed the very center of the target, and thus 'missing the mark', but still hit one of the zones around it that still gave them a score, the archer did not really fail completely. That is because the archer still hit the target and achieved a score, even if it was not a good score. Worse yet, if the archer misses the target completely, and hits something near the target, like their favorite sheep, they really messed up, but they tried to hit the mark. This means that they unintentionally hit their favorite sheep. This idea of sin being like an archer shooting an arrow at a mark implies that the archer is trying to hit the center of the target. What if the archer aimed for one of his annoying sheep instead of the target? Are you starting to see what is lacking with using this analogy as the main definition for H2398? When most of us sin, it is an intentional wrong doing that we know is wrong. If the archer analogy was best, then it would be an archer purposely shooting something other than the target. If an archer shoots an arrow in this analogy, while trying to obey a commandment of God, by missing in their attempt to obey, then they do what? Disobey, right. So even if a person believes this archer-arrow type definition of H2398 should be the main definition, then the end result is still a person not doing what God wants them to do. Which is what? Disobedience.

When God tells us things that we should do in our lives, this should be the goal in our lives to go for. When God tells us things we should not do, we should make sure to not do those things. If we purposely do things that we know God doesn't want us to do, is that wrong of us to do? Yes. So what is the best definition of sin then? When we do anything to disobey God, isn't that a sin? What is an example in the Bible about what sin is? In [Genesis 2:16-17](#) God explained his first commands to Adam, and told him what would happen if he disobeyed: 'And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, Of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat: But of the

tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die.' In [Genesis 3:6](#) it says 'And when the woman saw that the tree *was* good for food, and that it *was* pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make *one* wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat.' Later in chapter 3 of Genesis God described their punishments for eating this fruit from the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. When Adam and Eve ate of the fruit that God told them not to, was it a matter of just 'missing the mark' or 'whoops, I messed up'? No, Adam and Eve knew that they were not supposed to eat of the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, but they did anyway. They purposefully disobeyed God. Sin is disobeying God. Any other definition of sin is either self-deception to make ones self look less guilty, or is a method of controlling and manipulating other people.

We can also accidentally disobey God, which means we accidentally sinned in that situation. In the Old Testament of the Bible, there are discriptions of what Israel was was supposed to do when they sinned without knowing it. We don't need to list those verses out, what is important for us to do now is to ask God to show us anything that we need to repent about. Then when God shows us things that we need to repent about, we can ask him to forgive us for those things, or we can even ask him now to forgive us for sins we did but did not know it was a sin. The important thing about this is just because we did not know a sin was a sin, we are not guiltless, so we need to ask God to forgive us for even those sins we did accidentally and unknowingly, or unintentionally.

2.7 When does God forgive us?

If we have sinned against God what must we do to be forgiven? Are we automatically forgiven right after we sin? Or do we need to ask him to forgive us? Because if Jesus automatically forgave everyone every time they sinned, then why would he send anyone to the lake of fire, and why did God

punish Adam and Eve? This means that sin is not automatically forgiven, right? If sin was automatically forgiven, then nobody would ever go to the lake of fire, ever.

Let's look at some parables and situations in the Bible that support this concept that we must ask to be forgiven, in order to be forgiven. Because clearly something has to happen before God and Jesus forgive us right? If sin is not automatically forgiven, then something has to happen for us to be forgiven.

An example of a verse telling us that we need to confess our sins in order to be forgiven, is [1 John 1:9](#). [Psalm 32:5](#) shows us that we should confess our sins to God, and that we do not need to confess them to anyone else to be forgiven by God and Jesus. We do not need to confess to a priest, or anyone else. However, if we sin against another person, we should confess it to them and ask them to forgive us ([James 5:16](#)). Some people think these “confess one to another” verses mean that we should confess to fellow Christians our sins that we have done against God. I disagree, and believe that these verses mean that if we have a fault (or sin) against that other person. Like, if you lie to somebody you should tell them and apologize in my opinion. If it was a quick minded slip of the tongue that wasn't accurate, and you no longer know how to find the person (maybe they were another customer at a store or etc), then just ask God to forgive you and arrange whatever is needed to be done, if anything.

2.8 Is there a punishment for unpaid debts?

[Matthew 18:23](#) shows us many important things. Please read the parable and then come back here. Did the King automatically forgive the servant who owed him money? No. Did the King mention a punishment for the unpaid debt? Yes. What happened when the servant asked the King to 'have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.'? The King forgave all

of the servant's debt. But the King was just about to have the servant sold, to pay the debt. Do you think the King was bluffing, and was going to automatically forgive the servant anyway? Or do you think that because the servant asked for patience, that he was forgiven? The servant had to ask in order to receive forgiveness, right? Or do you think the King in this parable automatically forgave the servant? The debt in this parable is relating to sin, just as if the servant had sinned against the King by breaking one of the King's laws. God and Jesus are our examples. We must ask in order to be forgiven. Further in the parable, when that same servant did not forgive a fellow servant who owed him money, who also asked for patience, did the first servant sin? Yes, because the King (God) in this parable, would have forgiven that second servant, because the second servant asked for patience, therefore the King (God) expected the first servant to forgive the second servant.

[Matthew 18:32-35](#) shows what the King said and did to the first servant. The King delivered the first servant to the 'tormentors' until his debt was paid. This is the verse that is used in most churches to cause Christians to be afraid of 'unforgiveness', along with other verses that say we will have consequences if we have not forgiven others. Yes we must forgive others, but they must ask us to forgive them ('have patience with them'). If we have to ask Jesus to forgive us of our sins, in order to be forgiven, then why would Jesus then require us to automatically forgive other people, even when they don't ask us for forgiveness? Is Jesus a hypocrite who tells us to do things he would not do? If God (like the King in the parable) does not automatically forgive sins, then we also should not be required to automatically forgive sins (unless on the year of jubilee, more about that soon, as it relates to debts).

The whole reason I bring this topic up is to free others of the guilt of 'unforgiveness'. It is not easy to forgive a person who hurt us or our loved ones, when the offender does not even care what they did, or when they do not even admit what they did. I believe this is why God only requires us to forgive when they ask us to forgive them, because when they ask (if they

really mean it), it can be easier to forgive them. If a person asks us to forgive them about something, and we refuse to forgive them, then that is when we are disobeying God. That is when we truly have 'unforgiveness' and face punishment unless we forgive them. If they are just joking when they ask for forgiveness, or if they don't really mean it, then we most likely are not required to forgive them. For example, some people say they are sorry to us, just to get something from us, but they are not really sorry. It can be difficult to discern if a person is truly sorry about something, so we should ask God to give us discernment.

Because of the unforgiveness myth, I really wonder how often people truly forgive their offenders when they say they have forgive them. This is because most offenders do not ask to be forgiven, and most of them do not show any real remorse for their wrong doing. We should ask God to help us to forgive others, once those people ask us to forgive them. I know its not easy even when they ask for forgiveness, but simply saying you have forgiven an offender who has not asked for forgiveness does not mean you have truly forgiven them in your heart. Yes God can help us to voluntarily and truly forgive those who do not ask for forgiveness, I am not saying God cannot do that, I am saying that humans have a much harder time forgiving when the offender does not ask to be forgiven. Again, if you skipped around in this book and missed what I said earlier, if you are destroying your life or the life of others because somebody hurt you, then you probably do need to forgive the person who hurt you even if they have not asked you to forgive them.

2.9 What about the wayward son?

In [Luke 15:11](#), the wayward son parable starts. In [Luke 15:21](#), the wayward son did not ask to be forgiven, but when he returned home, he did acknowledge his sin against his father and admitted that he was no longer worthy to be called the son of his father. His Father welcomed him back as his son anyway.

I believe that this parable shows us that when an offender admits to us honestly that they hurt us, we should forgive them just like the father in the parable did. I would even guess that in this case where the offender admits honestly to us their wrongdoing against us, that we would be required to forgive them. If the offender just admits their fault to somebody else, and then that other person tells us, that would not be an admission directly to us, and in that case I would guess we do not have to forgive the offender until the offender admits the fault directly to us. Also the wayward son returned home which suggests that just the act of returning home is a form of repentance. If we just admit a sin to God, will he then forgive us? Or do we need to ask him to forgive us? I believe that to be sure that we are forgiven, we should ask him to forgive us, and not just admit a sin. It is possible that just admitting a sin to God is enough, but I personally prefer to ask God to forgive me of my sins, because it not only admits the sin, but asks God to forgive it. Also, in this situation, if we were to sin against God and then admit the sin to a friend, but not to God directly, would God forgive us? I personally doubt it, based on this parable, but it could be that that person who admits their sin to their friend would be forgiven by God, but why not be sure and just repent to God directly?

[1 John 1:9](#) says 'If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us *our* sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.' This verse shows we must do something to be forgiven. We must confess. If we also ask God to forgive us for a sin, that is the same thing as admitting a sin to him in my opinion. This verse is possible evidence that all we have to do is admit our sins to God, but again, I prefer to ask him to forgive me to be more sure. [Psalm 32:5](#) says 'I acknowledged my sin unto thee, and mine iniquity have I not hid. I said, I will confess my transgressions unto the LORD; and thou forgavest the iniquity of my sin. Selah.' Once again, the sin was acknowledged to God.

[Luke 17:3](#) says 'Take heed to yourselves: If thy brother trespass against thee, rebuke him; and if he repent, forgive him.' and [verse 4](#) says 'And if he trespass against thee seven

times in a day, and seven times in a day turn again to thee, saying, I repent; thou shalt forgive him.' Once again, there is a requirement for the offender, 'if he repent'. In these 2 verses, the burden is first on the victim to rebuke his brother, then the burden is on the offending brother until he repents. If he repents, then the burden is put back onto the victim until he forgives the offender. [Luke 17:3-4](#) pretty much sums up this whole chapter. It simplifies the whole issue in just 2 verses.

Furthermore, [1 Kings 8:44-50](#) shows that we must repent in order to be forgiven, or at least that the writer of Kings believes so. In [2 Chronicles 7:14](#) God says 'If my people, which are called by my name, shall humble themselves, and pray, and seek my face, and turn from their wicked ways; then will I hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin, and will heal their land.' Once again, forgiveness was not automatic in this verse. If God does not automatically forgive sins, do we have to automatically, immediately forgive people when they do wrong to us? I believe that we only have to forgive a person if they ask us to forgive them or if they at least honestly admit what they did wrong to us (the admission needs to be directly to us in my opinion).

2.10 Can we volunteer to forgive?

If somebody owes us money, for example, and they cannot pay, we do have the option to voluntarily forgive them. [Luke 7:41](#) is the start of a parable that might show us this kind of voluntary forgiveness. Jesus was well aware of the year of Jubile, which was every 50 years. On the year of Jubile, people were required to forgive the debts that people owed them. This Parable in [Luke 7:41](#) might also be about the year of Jubile when debt forgiveness was required. After the parable, concerning the woman having her sins forgiven, it is not clear in the text if she asked to be forgiven or not, so that part of it is not proof either way about this forgiveness doctrine, because she could have asked to be forgiven, and it just wasn't mentioned by Jesus.

Again, if somebody is destroying their own life or the life of others because a person hurt them, then maybe they should ask God to help them to voluntarily forgive the offender, so that they do not destroy their life. The main reason why I wrote this chapter was to show people that if an offender does not admit their wrong doing to us, and do not ask us to forgive them, then this does not mean we are 'going to hell' for this one thing like the fear inducing myth declares. We should not let ourselves be controlled by fear, unless it is fear of what God will do in our lives if we continue to sin without any care.

Of course sins have penalties if we do not ask God to forgive us, and sometimes penalties remain in our life even after we are forgiven (King David is a good example of this perhaps). But the unforgiveness myth specifically is used to put fear into people to always forgive any offender automatically, which is a very harmful doctrine to society by itself, because it makes offenders think that there are no consequences for their wrong doing, and further oppresses the victim.

2.11 What about all of the verses.....?

What about all of the verses that say we must forgive? Yes we must forgive. But I would ask you when do we have to forgive them? Most of the verses that churches use to say we must automatically forgive people, never mention a time frame or requirements for forgiveness. The verses they use just simply say we must forgive others, which I totally agree with. The key point that they leave out is when do we have to forgive others? And when does the burden shift from the offender to the victim? The burden only shifts from the offender to the victim when the offender does what they should do, and they ask for forgiveness from the victim (or maybe even just honestly admits what they did wrong), then the burden shifts to the victim who then is required to forgive him. This is one of the main problems with these modern doctrinal myths, people assume things about the verse without fully analyzing it. This is why we need to ask God to help us to properly interpret the

Bible. Many pastors and teachers like to pretend that there is only one way that verses can be interpreted, but in fact, there are many interpretations. Now, before you get confused or mad, let me say that God knows the correct interpretation, but we can interpret a verse incorrectly, meaning that we assume things about the verse and words that we should not, or that we do not understand the context or customs of the time. So, yes, there is only one correct interpretation, but only God can show us the correct one.

2.12 How many times should we forgive?

In [Matthew 18:22](#), when Peter asked Jesus how many times he should forgive his brother, Jesus said Seventy times seven. It could literally mean that we must forgive 490 times, but we don't have to forgive the 491st time.....But I believe Jesus is saying we must forgive every time, because which of us counts how many times we forgive a person? And if we do count, would it ever get past 490 times?

2.13 What about OT forgiveness?

Was the concept of forgiveness in the Old Testament? It sure was, but not in the way that we would at first suspect. [Exodus 21:33](#) is just one of many examples where if a man does things that cause his actions or his own animals to hurt or kill the animals of another man, then that man who caused the hurt, or the owner of the animal that caused the damage, was commanded to make it right by making a payment to the victim. This is a form of admitting that wrongdoing was done. It is pretty much the same thing as asking for forgiveness when these OT people would pay for the damages they did. But wait, why didn't the victim just automatically forgive the offender for what he did, and then say no payment was necessary? If the unforgiveness myth is correct, then these OT people in the

Bible should have just automatically forgiven their neighbors right? Or maybe you think the OT doesn't matter anymore? I will address that myth later in this book. Doesn't it sound reasonable that if a person causes the death of a neighbor's animal, that the offender pay the victim? Good people still do this today, when they accidentally ruin something that belongs to somebody else, they know the right thing to do is to offer to replace the damaged thing, so they offer to do so. Many victims in these cases just forgive the offender and tell them not to worry about it anymore, which is fine, but is it wrong to accept payment in this case? I don't think so. If you think it is right for the offender in this example above to pay for the damage his or her animal caused to their neighbor, then why would you think that we have to automatically forgive our neighbor when they hurt us or our things (if you do think that)?

2.14 What should we do now?

What now? If an offender has hurt you or a loved one, and asked you to forgive them, or admitted their wrongdoing to you directly, you should ask God to help you forgive them, and then try to forgive them as the Bible says. If an offender has hurt you or a loved one of yours but they have not asked you to forgive them, and have not admitted their wrongdoing to you directly (or to the victim), then it is my belief that you do not have to forgive them, as I have shown in this chapter. If an offender does not ask you to forgive them, or admit their wrong-doing, and you chose to not forgive them, then you should also make sure to not get revenge on them (revenge is best left for God to do if it is needed). Perhaps you should either ignore them if you can, or tell them you cannot trust them right now, or something like that. However, if you are destroying yourself or others, directly because of the hurt you feel because of what the offender did to you or your loved one, then it is probably best that you voluntarily forgive that offender by asking God to help you forgive the offender voluntarily. Then hopefully your life will be more positive.

2.15 False Guilt

One of the many problems with the unforgiveness myth is that it can cause people significant stress, and if they repeat the myth to others like most Christians do, it can cause other people to be needlessly stressed. The myth can cause people to think that they are going to go to hell if they are not able to, or do not want to automatically, voluntarily forgive an offender who hurt them or their loved ones. When a person reaches a place where they feel like they are not able to forgive, but while they still believe this myth, it can cause them to turn their back on God, or perhaps even start to hate God. This myth can also cause victims who choose not to forgive, or who are not able to, to feel like outcasts among their church, because other Christians in their church might have been lecturing them, and now the majority of the church might believe that this 'unforgiving' Christian is disobedient, or ignorant, or not a real Christian, or any other negative thing. This is just the tip of the iceberg of the damages that this myth has caused to victims who are just trying to make sense of these church doctrines.

2.16 Hell-fear control

Possibly one of the worst things about this unforgiveness myth is that when the victim believes they have to forgive an unrepentant offender, they most likely feel even more victimized. They might get angry with God about 'having to forgive' an unrepentant offender. Or their church or pastor might further exploit them by telling them they are sinning now and that they need to come to the weekly support group at the church. I am not saying that all churches or all support groups are a form of exploitation, but if the main topic of the sermon or meeting is about this unforgiveness myth, then it probably is a form of exploitation of the victim. This is because the victim will probably never be able to forgive the unrepentant offender

unless if God does a miracle. So the victim will probably be attending these classes or sermons for years, and may even be donating more money because of it, or buying books that teach this unforgiveness myth. Maybe these classes and books will teach the victim even more myths which might further victimize them. The main way that this unforgiveness myth dominates people is because of how it usually causes them to be afraid of going to hell for not automatically forgiving people. Another major fear people have is being shunned or excommunicated from their church.

2.17 Can we pay money to people to be forgiven by God and Jesus?

Something called an indulgence in the Catholic Church was used as a method for the Pope to supposedly forgive the sins of people if they pay for it. The person who payed would get a signed paper from the Pope declaring their sin forgiven. People also bought these hoping the sins of their dead loved ones would be forgiven. The Bible tells us that God and Jesus can forgive us. There is nowhere in the Bible that says a pope or pastor or leader of a church can forgive our sins. God and Jesus do not charge us money, or even anything when they forgives us, so why should we pay a person on earth to supposedly have our sins forgiven? If you have not read the New Testament, I suggest that you start reading it for yourself. A good place to start is at the beginning in Matthew. This will help you to see God's plan of salvation in better detail. Because of our sins, we should die for them according to the Old Testament law, but Jesus took our place and died for us so that we wouldn't have to die. We can now ask Jesus and God to forgive us for our sins and we can ask God to be our Father, and for us to be one of his children. [Isaiah 53:5](#) says 'But he *was* wounded for our transgressions, *he was* bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace *was* upon him; and with his stripes we are healed.'

2.18 The Willful Sin and other Cults

There are some cults like the 'Willful Sin' (they don't have an official name) that try to tell people that if they become saved and then sin again willingly and knowingly then they will go to hell and cannot be forgiven. This is not true. There are so many examples of people in the Bible who knew God and then sinned and were forgiven. King David had a man killed (2 Samuel 11) so that he could marry the man's wife but God clearly forgave him. It is best if you read all of the stories about David from when he was a shepherd to understand his relationship with God. Moses sinned against God at least one time after he was called by God at the burning bush, and his penalty was that he did not get to take Israel into the promise land, but God clearly still forgave him. In Matthew 16:23 Jesus rebuked Peter for saying that Jesus would not have to die and raise again on the third day. Clearly God and Jesus forgave Peter for that, because Peter was still a disciple after this. Again, if a person reads the New Testament, and hopefully also the Old Testament, they will not be so easily fooled by these cults. It is my opinion that cults like the willful sin cult are really just satanists or agents who are purposely trying to confuse people so that they can bring them into their cult, and cause them to depend on them for their cult teachings. Some of the cult 'missionaries' might even believe all of the cult teachings, and might not even know how the cult was founded.

2.19 When should we confront a person who offended us?

If it is a stranger or somebody that we will not be having to see much in our lives, it might be best to ignore them or forget about them if the offense is small. If it is a big offense

or a crime, I believe that we should definitely defend our families and ourselves (so that we can keep defending our families). It just depends on if we are willing to fight a legal battle if needed, or risk an argument, etc. The main thing is that we should ask God to show us his will in situations like this. [Matthew 18:15](#) says 'Moreover if thy brother shall trespass against thee, go and tell him his fault between thee and him alone: if he shall hear thee, thou hast gained thy brother. But if he will not hear *thee*, *then* take with thee one or two more, that in the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established. And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell *it* unto the church: but if he neglect to hear the church, let him be unto thee as an heathen man and a publican.' I believe these verses are talking about our Christian brothers and sisters, and not just our biological families. Notice that [verse 17](#) doesn't say to 'forgive him' and it doesn't say to ignore or forget what he did.

2.20 What is a freewill offering in the Old Testament?

In [Exodus 35:4-5](#) it says “And Moses spake unto all the congregation of the children of Israel, saying, This *is* the thing which the LORD commanded, saying, Take ye from among you an offering unto the LORD: whosoever *is* of a willing heart, let him bring it, an offering of the LORD; gold, and silver, and brass,”. Moses continues speaking about this until [verse 19](#). The wilderness Tabernacle was built using the donations that people made from their own free will, with Freewill Offerings. These offerings were not required by God, and God would not have looked down on the people who did not give, in my opinion. God wanted these offerings to be given without guilt or pressure, I believe.

2.21 Freewill Offering Comparisons

Once a person realizes that they are not required to

forgive a person who has not asked to be forgiven, or who has not admitted their faults, then they can pray and wait for that person to eventually ask for forgiveness or admit their fault, or they have another option. A person could go above and beyond, without being required, to forgive a person in the sense of a Freewill Offering. It is my opinion that a person who out of their own freewill, without guilt, pressure, shame, or worry, chooses to forgive a person who has not admitted their fault or asked to be forgive, should also pray and ask God and Jesus to help them to truly forgive. This is because it is a very difficult thing to forgive a person who has not apologized or asked to be forgiven, or who has admitted their faults. Perhaps the person should even write a letter or message to the offender and explain to them that they have forgiven them even though they were not required to. This could be a testimony and a witness to God and Jesus and his ability to help us forgive others.

I believe that if a person chooses to forgive another with the sense of a Freewill Offering of forgiveness, they still need to keep penalties for the offender. They still should not blindly trust the offender again. For example, if an offender was physically abusive, and the victim decides to forgive the abusive offender, then the victim should tell the offender that even though they are forgiving the abusive offender, they can no longer be alone with the offender. In other words, they should never again allow the offender to have the ability to hurt them again, even though they are forgiving the offender. It takes big miracles for abusive people to stop being abusive once they admit fault and truly want to stop being abusive. They will often plead and cry and swear that they have changed, only to do even worse harm the next time. I advise that you do not give them a chance to hurt you or your loved ones again. If you have an abusive spouse and you are 100% sure that God has told you to stay with that person, or to remarry them, then I guess you have to take them back, but at least ask God to confirm his will to you a second time, so that you know for sure what God wants you to do. Even a prophet in the Bible asked God to confirm his message a second time to them, so that they were 100% sure it was from God and his

2.22 Communion

The Roman Catholic Church declares that the bread and wine consumed by believers during a Communion literally become the blood and body of Jesus. They are taking the verses in [Matthew 26:26-29](#) out of context. These verses say: 'And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed *it*, and brake *it*, and gave *it* to the disciples, and said, Take, eat; this is my body. And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave *it* to them, saying, Drink ye all of it; For this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins. But I say unto you, I will not drink henceforth of this fruit of the vine, until that day when I drink it new with you in my Father's kingdom.' [Deuteronomy 12:23](#) says 'Only be sure that thou eat not the blood: for the blood *is* the life; and thou mayest not eat the life with the flesh.' Other places in the Bible also tell us not to drink blood. How can the Communion wine really be turned into blood when we are commanded to not drink blood? The answer is simple, it is not real blood. Jesus himself, after saying 'this is my blood' in [Matthew 26:28](#), calls this same "blood" 'this fruit of the vine' just one verse later in [Matthew 26:29](#). Why would Jesus call 'his blood' 'fruit of the vine'? Because it is not literally his blood, but symbolic of his blood. The Communion was to be a remembrance of the shedding of his blood and the affliction of his body that was done for us so that we would not have to die for our own sins. In many places in the Bible, the word of God is likened to bread. [Matthew 4:4](#) is one of these verses which says 'But he answered and said, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.' Jesus blood, which is pure due to him not sinning, was what allowed us to be forgiven and sustained when he shed it for us on the cross. His life example, his actions can be an example for us to live by, a sort of bread that can sustain us in many ways.

2.23 Since drinking blood is wrong, is the Communion a pagan ritual?

The Bible is very clear that we should not drink blood. Some satanists and peoples of other religions have and do drink blood, even human blood. They either do it for the adrenaline high, or because they believe that satan or their god has told them so. It is fairly clear that satan wants his most dedicated servants to drink human blood. It seems the highest form of satanic blood drinking is from human sacrifices. Satan usually does the complete opposite of what God commands us to do. With God commanding us not to drink blood, and satan wanting people to drink blood, we should be able to see that drinking blood is wrong in the eyes of God. Some people use this concept of blood drinking as a way to also say that the Communion is a pagan ritual. If Communion used real blood I would agree that the practice would be wrong. However, it is not real blood in the Biblical Communion, and the wine used is not drank for the same reason that blood drinkers drink blood. It should be clear to us that the Biblical Communion is a good thing, showing the sacrifice that Jesus did for us.

2.24 Is it a sin to be angry?

[Ephesians 4:26](#) says 'Be ye angry, and sin not: let not the sun go down upon your wrath:'. This verse alone should make it clear for us that being angry is not a sin, but what we might choose to do while being angry could be a sin. We should also resolve our anger that same day. If this is not enough, think about the many times in the Old Testament when God got mad at people for sinning. God is perfect and does not sin, so if he gets angry sometimes, then that means that being angry is not a sin right?

Many Christian denominations hold the belief that being angry is a sin all by itself. If a person gets angry, they usually examine the angry person as if they are the one with the

problem. They often do not look at what got them angry, to evaluate if they 'have a right' to be angry. Not putting the blame on an offender but instead blaming the angry victim, is not a way to promote emotional balance. The Bible lists many examples of how people might offend or hurt us, and the remedies for those situations. Just hiding our heads in the sand and 'forgiving' everything immediately, regardless of if they apologize or admit fault or not, is not a healthy way to live. In [John 2:13-17](#) did Jesus let the merchants and money changers stay in the temple even though it was an abomination against his Father? No, he made them leave. If a person never resolves situations when a person offends or hurts them, then their anger will build up secretly, and they might have an emotional breakdown or lash out at any time.

2.25 What happened to our sins when Jesus died for us?

[2 Corinthians 5:21](#) is misunderstood by some people in my opinion, and even Martin Luther seems to teach that Jesus was “made into sin” or “Jesus became sin”, which I believe cannot possibly be true. They believe this because they misunderstand [Corinthians](#) and other Bible books on this topic. Yes Jesus died for us for our sins, and paid the price of death that we should have paid, because of our sins. Our sins were placed on Jesus, in the sense that he had to carry them in some spiritual way I believe. Jesus even asked God “why hast thou forsaken me?” in [Psalm 22:1](#), I think because God couldnt look at Jesus or interact with him the same way he could before while he was carrying our sins. After Jesus died he was restored and resurrected. What people like Luther try to say is that Jesus essentially became guilty of being a sinner just because he talked with sinners, and so forth. They try to say in other places that Jesus was innocent but they still say that he “became sin” and “was guilty by association with sinners” (at least in the eyes of people, but maybe even they think in the

eyes of God, what they believe is confusing), and so forth, which doesn't make sense to me how that could be true. Jesus was not guilty of any sins, he was sinless, and guiltless. He carried our sins upon himself but he himself did not commit any of those sins. I will tell you why I think Luther and others are wrong:

<https://wolffmueller.co/dis-martin-luther-claim-that-jesus-was-an-adulterer/>

Two of the three Hebrew words that this verse in [corinthians](#) was probably translated from can either mean “sin” or “sin offering” in the Old Testament (I wrote more about the New Testament Hebrew in my book “What is Truth?”). I believe that what this verse in [Corinthians](#) is saying is that God made Jesus a sin offering for us. Notice that the words “to be” in the [KJV](#) are in italics because they are not present in the Greek and probably were also not present in the Hebrew it came from. “For he hath made him sin for us,” doesn't sound right does it? But “For he hath made him a sin offering for us,” does make much better sense right? In Hebrew, if there is no definite article, then the English translation of adding an “a” is implied because it means the word is not definite. To ensure the reader that the thing being described is not definite, an “a” must be added before it.

2.26 Jesus was without sin or blemish

There are many places in the Bible that show us that Jesus was perfect and did not sin. One less commonly known thing though is that even seven people in the Bible said that Jesus was without sin, innocent, or that he was righteous, ect. I did not check these verses yet but I encourage you to check them, as I trust John from the video below who mentions these verses around 43:00 in the video. [Matthew 27:4](#), [Luke 23:4](#), [Luke 23:15](#), [Matthew 27:19](#), [Luke 23:41](#), [Luke 23:47](#), and [Matthew 27:54](#). I am not sure why John lists these in this order. https://youtu.be/WbVg9x_dplA John Kostik – God Math 7

2.27 Can Jesus forgive our sins?

Yes, Jesus showed us that he can also forgive our sins, when he forgave the man in a bed with a palsy in [Luke 5:18-26](#). In [verse 24](#) Jesus specifically says he showed them that he (the Son of man) “hath power upon Earth to forgive sins,”. God is the only other one that can forgive our sins.

2.28 Binding and Loosing

There are popular false beliefs that Christians can “bind” and “loose” things “in the power of Jesus” without regard as to what the will of God and Jesus is. Many Christians pray prayers like “I bind you satan in the name of Jesus” concerning a topic they are worried about. We must think about God's will. If you were a king and had a knight who was going around telling people what they could and could not do concerning things that you never gave the knight authority for, wouldnt you be upset or annoyed?

Not only this, but the basis for this myth is in [Matthew 16:19](#) and [Matthew 18:18](#) when the clear context of chapter 18 is about forgiveness and nothing to do with power or control. Read the whole chapter. [Matthew 16:19](#) is said the same way as it is in [18:18](#), so, trying to claim that chapter 16 gives authority to Christians to wield this magic myth is wrong.

This binding and loosing is a one verse method of explaining the parable that is also in the last part of [Matthew chapter 18](#). It should be clear to us in this context of this whole chapter that binding and loosing is like imprisoning or freeing a person who offends us and also asks us to forgive them (I equate repenting with this servant's asking for patience and saying he will repay all).

I believe that this means if a person does you wrong and asks you to forgive them, but you “bind” that offence they did to them in a figurative way without forgiving them, then God in heaven will “bind” this unforgiveness as a sin that you did. I believe it is wrong for us to assume that we have the authority

to “bind” and “loose” things and then expect God to use his power to do what we commanded under our own will.

2.29 Do I need to be baptized?

One of the first steps the Catholic Church had developed for their teaching of the path of 'salvation' was to have people pay money to have their babies christened (their form of baptism). People were told this had to be done to get to heaven but this is not really true. Firstly, Baptism was supposed to be a full immersion it seems according to the Bible, because it symbolizes the death and resurrection of Jesus. The full immersion can symbolize being in the ground or a tomb. It can also symbolize a crossing over into a new part of our lives as a child of God. Christenings seemed to only be a sprinkling of water, and the baby of course didn't know what was happening. The main point about Biblical baptism was that the person understood what baptism was about and volunteered to do it. The other thing wrong with christening was that Jesus told the thief on the cross that he would be with him in paradise that same day in [Luke 23:43](#). The thief probably had never gotten baptized, and probably never followed Jesus. If the thief on the cross could go to 'Paradise' with Jesus seemingly without being baptized, then it seems baptism is not required for salvation. I do believe that Baptism is very important, and should be done Biblically when a person understands it and is willing. This passage in Luke also brings up the question of Paradise and Purgatory, which I will address in the next chapter.

2.30 Can we forgive but also require a payment for damages that were done?

For situations like with [Exodus 21:23-25](#) where a penalty is put on the offender, does the penalty vanish if we forgive them after they admit their wrong doing to us directly or ask us to forgive them? One of the many examples would be when Moses sinned against God, God told him he would not be

allowed to take Israel into the promise land. I believe God forgave Moses, because it is fairly obvious, and Moses was also seen by some of the disciples in [Matthew 17:1-4](#). If God was still holding any of Moses' sins against him, why would he let Moses appear to those disciples? Anyway, even though God seems to have forgiven Moses, Moses was still not allowed to lead Israel into the promise land, instead Joshua led them into the promise land after Moses died. You might think the Old Testament is done away with, so this example doesn't matter? If so, we will address that topic later in this book.

Chapter 3 Hell and eternity

3.1 What is Hell?

Once again, this is a topic that many people are very emotional about. If you get extremely emotional easily, then you might want to skip this chapter in this book. First we must know what Hell is, before we ask the other important questions. Is hell a physical place where demons torture bad people when they die? Hell is not an exact location or place. In the KJV, the first use of the word “hell” is לֵאָזֶבֶת H7585 and it could easily mean 'grave' in [Deuteronomy 32:22](#). In fact, if you look at H7585, it is translated 31 times as 'grave', 3 times as 'pit', and 31 times as 'hell'. This is a common thing that the KJV translators did, they would often use two very similar meaning words to translate from the same Hebrew word, in order that the reader would have no doubt as to the meaning of the word they are translating. It is my believe that this word לֵאָזֶבֶת H7585 always means 'grave', but the KJV translators used the word 'hell' because hundreds of years ago it probably meant something similar to the word 'grave'. If you look at each time the word hell is used in the King James version, most of the verses make perfect sense if it would have been translated with the word grave. I encourage you to look at a concordance and search for the word hell and look at each verse it is used in. I have studied this on my own before, but I saw this website below about hellfire when I was searching for the meaning of the word 'hell' in Old English. It seems that the word hell used to mean 'a hidden spot', and hell used to mean 'the abode of the dead'. The abode of the dead could easily mean a grave, and it would be a mythical stretch to turn that word into something relating to a place of 'eternal torture'.

<http://beyondweird.com/occult/hellfire.html>

<https://ia802507.us.archive.org/0/items/anglosaxondictio00tolluoft/anglosaxondictio00tolluoft.pdf>

Further proof that “hell” in the new testament is at least sometimes “grave” is Acts 2:27, which is a direct quote of Psalm 16:10 which uses the Hebrew word שָׁאֵל H7585 which about half the time is translated as “grave” in the KJV. Acts 2:31 tells us that David was talking about Jesus being resurrected, but perhaps he could also be talking about himself at the same time. Verse 34 suggests to us that David was not one of the 24 “elders” resurrected with Jesus, who I believe was the “firstfruit” of the resurrection. But I believe that David will be resurrected when Jesus comes back. It seems that David was repentant near the end of his life, and was probably expecting to be resurrected. Would God really put Jesus, or even a saint like David in “hell” to be tortured until they could be resurrected and brought to “heaven”? No, that does not follow scripture and is more like the Catholic purgatory doctrine. So it should be clear to us that King David is talking about the 1st death sleep in the grave, and that God will resurrect him. This should be sufficient proof to you that the New Testament is usually referring to the 1st death sleep of the “grave” when it uses the word “hell”.

3.2 Where does our soul go when our body dies?

In the Old Testament, when it mentions a person being dead or possibly dying, it often says they 'slept with his fathers', or something to that same effect. [Psalm 13:3](#) says 'Consider *and* hear me, O LORD my God: lighten mine eyes, lest I sleep the *sleep of death*;' [Daniel 12:2](#) says 'And many of them that sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake, some to everlasting life, and some to shame *and* everlasting contempt.' [1 Thessalonians 4:14](#) says 'For if we believe that Jesus died and rose again, even so them also which sleep in Jesus will God bring with him.' It is clear to me that when we die, our souls are in a sleep state until Jesus returns to sort out the wheat and the tares, and the sheep and the goats.

You might ask why people have 'near-death' experiences, and I would say that it is a dream or vision they are having, or maybe even an out-of-body experience. However, this does not mean that the things people see during these 'near-death' experiences are fully real. They could just be a mix of dreams, visions, and out-of-body time. It could even be a dream or vision from satan to make an unsaved person think that they are a 'good' person and 'will go to heaven'. I have a theory that a human spirit is still connected to the body for 3 days, if the brain is not completely destroyed. I also believe that once God removes this connection, the person cannot come back to their body unless by a miracle from God. Again, this is just a theory of mine, as these 'near-death' topics are not really explained in the Bible as far as I have seen. In [John 11:11](#) it says 'These things said he: and after that he saith unto them, Our friend Lazarus sleepeth; but I go, that I may awake him out of sleep.' Jesus was talking about Lazarus who was dead. I believe that God can also show people visions or give them messages while their body is 'dead'. Anyone who has had a near-death experience should ask God to help them discern that experience so that they can know if it was a vision from God or satan.

In [Psalm 6:5](#) it says 'For in death *there is no* remembrance of thee: in the grave who shall give thee thanks?' David is talking to God in this Psalm. Do you think this verse indicates that people are tortured in 'hell' or happy in 'heaven' in the grave, before the return of Jesus? Doesn't it sound like this verse is saying that dead people are in a sleep state, unable to consider, remember, or thank God, until Jesus returns and resurrects his saints? If people actually read the Bible and asked God to help them to understand it, they wouldn't fall prey to most of these myths that the serpent has circulated.

3.3 Are our souls eternal?

Our movies, music, culture, and even churches are constantly repeating the concept that souls are eternal. But are

they really eternal? This myth claims that our souls cannot be destroyed, that even God cannot destroy them. Do you think it is impossible for God to destroy the soul of an unrepentant sinner? Where in the Bible does it say that a soul is automatically eternal? Nowhere. Where in the Bible does it say that our souls cannot or will not be destroyed if we are unrepentant? Nowhere. Does the Bible say that our souls can or will be destroyed? Many verses give the clear message that our souls can be destroyed if we are unrepentant and if we never knew Jesus. I believe this is what is being talked about when [Revelation 2:11, 20:6, 20:14, and 21:8](#) mentions 'the second death'. I believe this 'second death' is the death of the soul, the destruction of the soul into non-existence. The first death, of course, would be the death of the flesh, and is a movement of our soul. This implies that the second death also must be a movement or change in the soul. The 'eternal soul' myth suggests that the second death is some kind of eternal-death, but how can we die constantly, for ever? That would make no sense. It makes more sense that the second death is also a major, one-time change in the soul, even a movement or 'removal'. Even John implies that the only way to gain eternal life is to do the will of God by saying in [1 John 2:17](#) 'And the world passeth away, and the lust thereof: but he that doeth the will of God abideth for ever.' This verse implies that the only way we can 'abide' forever, is by doing the will of God. This implies that those who do not do the will of God, will not 'abide' forever. If every soul lives for ever and cannot be destroyed, why would he say this? Wouldn't he have said something different here if the myth was true? [Daniel 12:2](#) says 'And many of them that sleep in the dust of the earth shall awake, some to everlasting life, and some to shame *and* everlasting contempt.'

Was Daniel saying that there will be an 'everlasting death'? I believe what he meant is that either those people will die the second, final death in contempt, or that others will have contempt for them forever. Neither answer implies that the person's body or soul will exist forever in some kind of burning torment, but rather that the memory of them might remain.

Before anyone thinks there is now no consequences for unforgiven sins, there of course is, which I will talk about next.

Perhaps one could say that the souls of even the unrepentant people who reject Jesus would have been eternal if God does not have them be destroyed in the lake of fire, but God keeps his word, and it seems at least some of them will be destroyed completely. So, because of this, I would say that the human soul is not eternal unless God allows it to be.

3.4 Will anyone be tortured for ever?

In previous versions of this book I thought that maybe satan, the false prophet, and those who worshiped the beast in his image, and who took the mark of the beast, would all burn forever in the lake of fire. I was studying with an online friend of mine, Alana, and I noticed some verses that seem to prove otherwise.

The Hebrew word in the Old Testament that is usually translated as '*for ever*' or '*everlasting*' is H5769 and comes from the root H5956 which almost always has the meaning of 'to hide' in verb forms. This word for '*for ever*' in the Bible does not always mean eternal or everlasting. A more accurate meaning for it in English is 'an unknown time period', as in, only God and Jesus probably know the time period, and probably not us or angels or demons. This time period could be any amount of time, even eternity or forever. It just depends on what is being mentioned and how long God designed it to last.

[https://www.blueletterbible.org/lang/lexicon/lexicon.cfm?](https://www.blueletterbible.org/lang/lexicon/lexicon.cfm?Strongs=H5769&t=KJV)

[Strongs=H5769&t=KJV](https://www.blueletterbible.org/lang/lexicon/lexicon.cfm?strongs=H5769&t=KJV)

[https://www.blueletterbible.org/lang/lexicon/lexicon.cfm?](https://www.blueletterbible.org/lang/lexicon/lexicon.cfm?strongs=H5956&t=KJV)

[strongs=H5956&t=KJV](https://www.blueletterbible.org/lang/lexicon/lexicon.cfm?strongs=H5956&t=KJV)

Hebrews 2:14 seems to prove that the devil will be destroyed. In **Ezekiel 28:18** (start reading at **verse 11** or the beginning of the chapter) it describes that satan will be burned to ashes on earth. **Verse 19** right after that says about satan 'and never *shalt* thou *be* any more.'

Revelation 20:10 says 'And the devil that deceived them

was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet *are*, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever.' Perhaps this is a hint that the Lake of fire is the magma in the center of the earth because [Ezekiel](#) says he will be burned into ashes on (this can also mean 'in' in Hebrew) the Earth. Ever is in the verse twice here, so that might mean satan will be tormented for two time periods, which seem to have an end point when satan is turned into ashes.

[Revelation 14:11](#) says 'And the smoke of their torment ascendeth up for ever and ever: and they have no rest day nor night, who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receiveth the mark of his name.' The smoke here may only go up for two time periods. Some will dissipate eventually. Even if this smoke was eternal, it is not saying their torment here will be eternal. It doesn't say the day and nights of torment will be eternal.

[Revelation 20:15](#) says 'And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire.'. How do we get written into the book of life? By admitting that Jesus died for our sins so we would not have to, and he was resurrected from the dead, and then asking God and Jesus to forgive you for our sins, and for God to be your Father, and for God and Jesus to help you, and do their will in your life.

For the people who were not found in the book of life, the verse does not say they will be there 'forever'. Why should we assume they will be there forever when it doesn't say 'for ever'? The words 'for ever' are in the other two verses, why is it not in the verse concerning the people not written in the book of life? Does that mean that some of the people in the lake of fire will not be there for ever? I believe that the people who were not written in the book of life will not be in the lake of fire for ever. It could even be that they are destroyed right when they get into the lake of fire, or shortly after.

It is clear that we should not worship the beast, and we should refuse the mark of the beast, and we should repent to God and ask to be his child, and we should accept, worship and follow Jesus. It would be an assumption to think that people who were not written in the book of life get destroyed

immediately upon entering the lake of fire. I am not trying to scare people into repenting to God, but I want to make it clear that there are consequences for unforgiven sins. So, my point is that the souls of the people not written in the book of life could be in the lake of fire for a certain amount of time.

[Matthew 10:28](#) says 'And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell.' I believe that we this is saying we should fear or respect God. God is the one who can destroy both 'soul and body' in 'hell' (the lake of fire). "hell" in this verse is probably not from שאול "grave" H7585 but probably originally from "Hinnom" (the valley) H2011 which might be translated into G1067.

3.5 What about the gnashing of teeth?

The few verses that mention weeping and gnashing of teeth do not mention a time frame, and they do not use the words "for ever". Why assume it would be for ever when it does not say for ever? Clearly these people are being punished in some way, even if the punishment is just that they realize they wont be in the kingdom of God. It is my belief that there will be a punishment for every single sin done that Jesus and God did not forgive. In other words, for every sin that people did not repent for, I believe there will be a punishment, and it will be something we would want to avoid. I encourage you to do a concordance search for the word 'gnashing' in the King James, so you can see this for yourself. I say this because the next paragraphs are very important and go along with this one.

3.6 What is the lake of fire?

The lake of fire seems to be the closest thing to the myth of 'hell' that really exists. [Revelation 19:20](#) says 'And the beast was taken, and with him the false prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had

received the mark of the beast, and them that worshipped his image. These both were cast alive into a lake of fire burning with brimstone.' They were put alive into fire that burns really hot, is what I see this saying. [Revelation 20:14](#) tells us 'And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death.' It seems to me that this is saying that the concept of death, the death of the flesh, and the grave, the decaying of a body in the ground, are both destroyed in the lake of fire. Perhaps this means that the lake of fire from that point on is the only place where something can die.

Where is the lake of fire? A lake is liquid that is surrounded by land, so I doubt the lake of fire is a star (which is a ball of fire surrounded by a vacuum). I would guess that the lake of fire is the magma in the center of the earth, which is surrounded by land. Brimstone is sulfur, and it seems that scientists now suspect that there is sulfur in the center of the Earth. I do not believe in the 'hollow earth' nonsense that paid trolls seem to spam on the internet along with flat-earth nonsense. It is probably impossible for the earth to be hollow for many reasons, like the need for enough mass to be able to hold the moon in orbit around the earth, and the need for enough magnetic material in the center of the earth to cause an electromagnetic field to surround the earth, and also the massive pressure from all of the weight of the dirt, rocks, and magma pressing down would be too much for any sort of 'ceiling' to hold all of the weight for there to be a 'hollow' center. A lake is a lake full of a liquid, with no hollow bubbles in the depths. It is fairly clear that the earth is full of a magma 'lake'.

<https://www.livescience.com/51249-earth-core-contains-brimstone.html>

3.7 What do the parables tell us?

So, when the KJV says 'hell', it almost always means the 'grave', and when it mentions the 'lake of fire', this is the actual 'hell' type place that people might expect. In [Matthew](#)

13:30, at the end of the wheat and tares parable, it says 'Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn.' The gathering of the tares into bundles does not suggest immediate torture. In other words, this does not hint to us that wicked people go straight to the lake of fire. Instead, it suggests to us that wicked people are bound, or put into the sleep state I previously mentioned, and then later burned.

Now, for those who did not worship the beast or his image, or accept his mark, how long will it take for them to burn until they are completely destroyed? The Bible is not clear about this. It is interesting here that the wheat get put into a barn and are not bound. Maybe that means the people who repent of their sins to God and Jesus are put into a sleep state somewhere else?

In the parable of the sheep and the goats, at [Matthew 25:41](#) it says about the goats 'Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels:' Now the key words here are 'everlasting fire'. It is clear that the fire is everlasting, but we should not assume that the suffering that happens there is for ever, for everyone there. This is because the adjective 'everlasting' is describing the word fire. The word 'everlasting' is not talking about how long people suffer here. Some of the goats might be people who did not worship the beast or his image, and who did not accept the mark of the beast. The last verse of the parable of the sheep and the goats says about the goats 'And these shall go away into everlasting punishment: but the righteous into life eternal.' I may be wrong, but it is possible, that for the ones that did not worship the beast or his image, and did not accept his mark, that they will eventually burn away completely and be destroyed. This is because, if they get destroyed completely, this is still an 'everlasting punishment'. If I am right, then if they eventually get destroyed, they will never again live, for ever. In other words, if they end up being destroyed, it is a punishment with eternal consequences, and could also be called a 'everlasting

punishment'.

It was not my goal to cause any fear of hell in this chapter, but rather to remove fear. Whether I am right or wrong, the safest thing to do is to admit your sins to God and Jesus and ask them to forgive you, and ask them to guide you and help you, so that you can start your relationship with them. In [Matthew 3:12](#) it says 'Whose fan *is* in his hand, and he will thoroughly purge his floor, and gather his wheat into the garner; but he will burn up the chaff with unquenchable fire.'

3.8 Can we lose our salvation?

This is a controversial topic, but it seems that by the parable of the wayward son in [Luke 15:11](#) that we already looked at in chapter 2 of this book, that we can indeed lose our salvation. Once we ask for forgiveness and enter a relationship with God and Jesus. If we tell God and Jesus that we no longer want to have a relationship with them, or if we enter a willing agreement with satan, then I believe that in those situations, we would lose our salvation and our names would no longer be written in the book of life. I mean, I do not think it is possible to be a satanist and serve God at the same time.

In [Matthew 6:24](#) Jesus says 'No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.' Some people think that mammon means money here, it doesn't really matter for this topic, because the first part of the verse is what is important, that people cannot serve two masters. Even if it does mean 'money' then surely if we cannot serve both God and money, then we cannot serve both God and satan. The parable of the wayward son does not imply that the son served satan, but it does seem that because the wayward son effectively turned his back on his father, and left his inheritance, it seems that there was a complete separation of their relationship. In [Luke 15:24](#) the father says about his returned son 'For this my son was dead,

and is alive again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry.' This seems to me like their relationship was severed but now restored again. So maybe it is that if a person willingly tells God that they want to be separated from him, then I believe they probably have lost their salvation at that point, even if they don't serve satan willingly.

3.9 Can we talk to dead people or pray to them?

Is there such thing as a place called purgatory like the Catholic Church teaches? Or what about Paradise? There is no evidence in the Bible of any place of torment or even a place of relaxation where people wait until the day of Judgment. I have already explain how people go into a sleep state when they die, and so, if Mary and every other 'saint' who died is asleep, how can they hear us if we try to pray to them or talk to them? It is clear to me that they cannot, and only God can wake them up, because God is keeping their souls. Even if Mary or our relatives could hear us, what could they do? They have no power of their own right? Some cults and religions believe that people can talk to their dead relatives, but I believe that it is demons who talk to the channeler who summons the spirit (demon), and the demon then pretends to be the relative and talks to the channeler. Scammers can even do this kind of thing without the help of demons by wearing an earpiece and having a coworker whisper into their ear the things that they found about the scam victim while searching for their information online.

<https://www.gotquestions.org/purgatory.html>

3.10 Can we pray for the dead to improve their situation?

Supposedly it was Augustine who long ago either came

up with the Catholic doctrine of praying for the dead, or had a part in formulating it. He supposedly believed that praying for them in a specific way could remove the sins of a person who died. Some other Christian denominations have doctrines about praying for the dead also. The Bible is very clear that there is no forgiveness of sins for people who were not written in the book of life (saved) and have already died. If we could pray to get the sins of dead people forgiven, then nobody would ever go to the lake of fire. The Bible clearly tells us that many will go into the lake of fire. If our relatives could pray for us to have us forgiven after we die, then we could choose to be evil like Hitler was and then one of our relatives could help us get to heaven. This is clearly a false doctrine. Please read the New Testament in completion if you have not yet. Even just reading a chapter a day is enough to finish it in less than a year.

<https://www.ibelieve.com/faith/what-is-purgatory-and-is-it-in-the-bible.html>

3.11 What about Lazarus?

In [Luke chapter 16](#) there is a parable about a poor man going to a paradise like place and a rich man going to a purgatory like place. This parable should not be taken literally, and I believe it should not be used to explain Heaven or the lake of fire. At this time I will not write my reasons for ignoring this parable of the Bible. Perhaps in the future I will put my reason here. Therefore, I will put a quote of one possible reason for this parable in the Bible. It is from the link below, and perhaps you might want to read the whole website. The author probably has some different views than me, so keep that in mind. Here is the quote from that site: *“(6) The Greek word for "hell" is Tartarus, a word which appears in only a single verse in the entire Bible (2 Peter 2:4). But that verse is about fallen angels awaiting judgment, so its "hell" is not eternal and is not for human beings. Jesus Christ himself mocked the idea that human beings would go to Tartarus in his parable of Lazarus and the rich man, which clearly describes*

the afterlife of the pagan Greeks, called Hades. Hades was not "hell" because everyone went to Hades when they died. In Hades the heavenly regions (the Elysian Fields and Blessed Isles) were separated from the fiery pit of Tartarus (the Greek "hell") by an impassable abyss. The dead could chat with each other across this abyss, but no one could cross it. Thus the "blessed" were unable to help the "wicked." But of course this bizarre place was the invention of Greek poets like Homer and such a place had never been described anywhere in Hebrew scripture. When the Pharisees claimed that they would inherit heaven simply by being descendants of Abraham, Jesus ridiculed their absurd belief by putting the Gentile beggar Lazarus in the bosom of Abraham, and a rich Pharisee in the fiery Tartarus. But this does not mean that Jesus believed in "hell." What he did is like me telling a flat-earther, "Be sure not to fall over the edge!" One thing to note is that I already wrote most of this chapter before I went to that website below, and have already had my own beliefs about hell and the lake of fire before going there.

<http://www.thehypertexts.com/No%20Hell%20in%20the%20Bible.htm>

3.12 Do babies go to heaven or hell?

I have came up with a theory years ago, and I do not recall anyone else explaining it as being their original theory. I don't remember seeing any website or book or video from anyone with the same theory, I am not trying to say I am awesome or anything, but, I did want to mention this because my theory is very unique and because I wont be posting any source for this paragraph. I believe that when babies and children die, who have not yet had a chance to learn about Jesus and God in a way that tests their faith, and in a way that would allow them to choose God or not, then their souls go to the normal sleep type of death state like everyone else. However, I believe that when Jesus comes back and resurrects everyone who is written in the book of life, then he will also

resurrect these Babies and young children. I believe that these babies and children will be in the one thousand years with those of us who have our name written in the book of life. I believe it will be the responsibility of the resurrected 'saints' to raise and teach these babies and young children.

The Bible tells us that at the end of these one thousand years, satan will be released again (he was bound up for most or all of these thousand years), and it is my belief that he will tempt these people who were the resurrected babies and young children who did not yet decide if they wanted to serve God or not. Then there is one last battle against satan and his servants. I developed this theory because who else in the millennium would want to serve satan? Surely not the saints who were resurrected when Jesus returned. It wouldn't make any sense for those saints to have to just fight satan and his demons and evil people who were already waiting in the sleep state for judgment. The only thing that makes sense is that these people that satan tempts in these thousand years are the resurrected babies and young children (of my theory). I suggest you read all of Revelation if you have not yet. [Revelation chapter 20](#) specifically mentions these thousand years that I am referring to. The subject of this chapter is not about heaven, but just in conclusion here, I will say that I believe that Judgment day is after the final battle with satan. Then after Judgment day, I believe that those who have their name written in the Book of Life will live forever with God and Jesus.

3.13 Forty-two

In the book called “The Hitchhiker's Guide to the Galaxy”, there was a super computer that took millions of years to answer a question. The answer was “42”. The question that they asked the computer was not directly given, but it was implied that the computer was asked “What is the meaning of life?”. The author of the book seemingly loved mathematics, and 42 was a favorite number of his. This brings up a good point. People who do not believe in God, see no meaning in

life, or they see it as a contest to see who can live the longest or gain the most wealth, etc. Sadly, even many evolutionized Christians do not know what the meaning of life is. TV, movies, and schools would cause you to think that there is no meaning to life, and that it is the 'survival of the fittest'. So, what is the meaning of life?

3.14 What is the meaning of life?

Are we supposed to find aliens and talk to them? Are we supposed to transcend into gods or super androids? Common sense after reading the Bible would tell us that the meaning of life is that we are here to be tested to see if we will chose God or satan (not choosing God is basically the same thing as choosing satan). [John 3:16](#) says “For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.” [Ecclesiastes 12:13-14](#) says “Let us hear the conclusion of the whole matter: Fear God, and keep his commandments: for this *is* the whole *duty* of man. For God shall bring every work into judgment, with every secret thing, whether *it be* good, or whether *it be* evil.” If the meaning of life is not clear to you, please pray and ask God and Jesus to help you to understand it. I already knew what I believed when I wrote this and found that website below, but that site did remind me of those two verses I posted above, so I posted the link below.

https://www.openbible.info/topics/the_meaning_of_life

3.15 Condemnation

I briefly mentioned in other places in this book about people telling other people that they are 'going to hell' if they do something, or because they are doing something. This is condemnation, and I believe it is not usually our place to tell people where they are going unless if that person asks us what

happens when people die, or they legitimately want to learn how to be saved or forgiven, and so forth. As I briefly mentioned, fear is one way that the devil and his servants use to control people. If a person gets Bible bashed enough, or condemned enough to think they are going to hell now, or will go to hell if they don't do a bunch of things, it can cause them to just not care anymore about what they do, because they might think they are 'going to hell' anyway.

Even Jesus talked about the lake of fire, so I am not saying that a preacher cannot preach about 'hell', but many of them just rant about hell to cause fear so that people repent for their sins. Maybe God wants preachers do this sometimes, perhaps because coming to God with the fear of 'hell' is better than not repenting at all, but I believe that God would ultimately prefer that we want to have a relationship with him because we love him or at least because he is good, and not only because we are afraid of a punishment. But again, choosing God because we are afraid of a punishment is still ok, because we are still choosing God. God can show a person later on (after they choose God) that they do not need to fear 'hell', and God can cause a person to later on love him even if their first motivation is self preservation. I believe it is best if we let God lead us as to when to talk about 'hell' with people. God is the one who can convict a person of their sins in a loving way, that causes them to want to ask for forgiveness. But sometimes when people try to get an unsaved person to accept Jesus, then do it in a condemning way, or in a way that is not as loving as they should, or in a way that uses the fear of hell as a motivation.

Of course those who worship the beast and his image, and whosoever receives the mark of his name will be going to the lake of fire. Also the Bible is clear that those who were not written in the book of life get cast into the lake of fire. We need to have our names written in the book of life. [John 3:18](#) says 'He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.' We

need to believe that Jesus is the son of God, and that he died for us so that we can be forgiven. We need to ask God and Jesus to forgive us of all of our sins, and we should ask God to be our father, and we should ask God and Jesus to help us to start a relationship with them. We should also ask God to do his will in our lives.

3.16 Is just believing in Jesus enough?

[Matthew 7:21-23](#) is a good example, in my opinion (IMO), that just knowing who Jesus truly is, is not enough to enter into the Kingdom of Heaven (in this case, eternal life, IMO). We need to have a relationship with God and Jesus, by asking them to forgive our sins and do God's will in our lives. We need to recognize that Jesus died for our sins. We then should try to obey God and ask him to show us how to have a relationship with him and Jesus. We should ask God to be our Father and help us to see his love and how he is our Father. I believe a relationship with them is done by praying to God and Jesus, talking to them, obeying them, reading the Bible (KJV is best), etc.

I believe that just knowing that Jesus died for our sins, was resurrected, and is also worshipable like God, and was with God in the beginning, is not enough. Even satan knows these things. We need to do the things I mentioned above.

3.17 Does God forgive those who he puts in the Lake of Fire?

This idea came to me while I was also considering the idea of Freewill Offerings in regards to forgiveness. The Bible is clear to us about who will be put in the Lake of Fire, and why (which I already wrote about in this chapter). I suppose that it might be possible for God and Jesus to volunteer to forgive these people who he has placed in the Lake of Fire, so

that God and Jesus are not forever thinking about the sin, as a way to close up the books so to speak. This is just a possible theory that could be right or wrong. Even if God and Jesus do volunteer to to forgive people who are put in the Lake of Fire, that kind of voluntary forgiveness would not remove the penalty that those people have 'earned'. In other words, if God and Jesus were to forgive a person who is in the Lake of Fire, that kind of forgiveness would not remove them from the Lake of Fire, or the penalty of having to be in the Lake of Fire. It would probably just be for God and Jesus to have some final closure. I do not believe that God or Jesus could ever forget anything, but if this voluntary forgiveness theory is correct, it could give them some peace for those who were put in the Lake of Fire.

Chapter 4 The Rapture and 2nd coming

4.1 You should read all of this chapter

This is a myth that nobody should skip reading about. This is because, if I am right (which I am, haha), then people who believe in a rapture happening before the 'tribulation' will be so disappointing and overwhelmed when they don't get raptured before the tribulation, that they might turn their backs on God, and blame him for their own misunderstanding of the Bible. So I feel that it is ok to have 'pre-trib' rapture believers read this and be uncomfortable now, if it prevents them from great misery later on in their lives. I do believe that Jesus is coming back, but if you really study the bible, it is very much different than what the main stream rapture doctrines, movies, and books tell. Once again, we will look at the parables of Jesus, and other verses.

4.2 What do the parables of Jesus say?

We have already had a look at the wheat and tares parable, but that parable also helps to clear up this myth. [Matthew 13:30](#) says 'Let both grow together until the harvest: and in the time of harvest I will say to the reapers, Gather ye together first the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn.' This should make it clear enough to us just with this verse, that the tares, or wicked people, are bound and set aside into a place until they will be burned. Something that is bound cannot frolic all over the place, right? This means that when Jesus comes back, the wicked people will no longer be able to do anything, until judgement day.

Is Jesus coming back 2 more times? That is the only way the mainstream rapture myth could be true. Because in the mainstream rapture myth, Jesus comes back and takes away

only the born again people (which contradicts the revelation verses about the 144,000, and the wheat and tares parable, and many other verses), and then he leaves the wicked people on the earth to frolic during the tribulation (which contradicts this parable that we just considered). Nowhere in the Bible does it even hint that Jesus is coming back 2 more times. I have had rapture believers tell me 'Well, Jesus isnt setting foot on the ground when he comes back for the rapture, so it doesnt really count as him coming back.....'. This is the kind of self deception people have to use when they don't want to read all of the Bible which has many verses saying that once Jesus comes back for us, he will stay here with us. Is the sky considered part of the Earth? Of course it is. Is the atmosphere of Venus considered to be part of Venus? Of course. So If Jesus were to come tomorrow and appear in the sky, would he be coming to Earth? Of course. Do you see yet that Jesus cannot come back in the sky just for a vacation, then come back again a third time to fulfil the real requirements he needed to accomplish on Earth? The Bible says when he comes back, he will deal with the wicked, sort out the good sheep, and stay here for a thousand years with us while satan is bound up. Do you believe that Jesus is just going to 'hang out' in the sky during the 'tribulation' and wait there until after the 'tribulation'? What would he do for all of those years in the sky?

After the thousand years with Jesus here on Earth, satan will be released and there will be one final battle, then the famous judgement day will happen. After judgement day is when the eternal life in 'heaven' starts. The main problem with the rapture myth, is that most people don't read enough of their Bible on their own, to find the truth, and they just believe whatever their pastors or priests say. Im not saying that all leaders are bad or wrong, but some of them are bad apples for sure, and many of them just repeat the myths they learned in college or seminary.

In the good Samaritan parable in [Luke 10:35](#) it says 'And on the morrow when he departed, he took out two pence, and gave *them* to the host, and said unto him, Take care of him;

and whatsoever thou spendest more, when I come again, I will repay thee.' Did the Samaritan say he would come back two times? No. Please read the whole parable on your own, but this part here is a hint that the Samaritan expects himself to be gone for about 2 days (1 pence per day probably), and then he would be back. In some ways, the Samaritan is a figure hinting about the return of Jesus. Have you heard the verse in [2 Peter 3:8](#) that says 'But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day *is* with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day.' The Samaritan paying for what seems like 2 days of rest for the man, hints to us that Jesus (whom the Samaritan is hinting about) will return in 2000 years. It has been about 2000 years now hasn't it? In [Matthew 25:41](#), in the parable of the sheep and the goats, at the end, it says about the goats 'Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels.' This whole sheep and goats parable was one process of sorting. It was not two trips that the king made. The King (Son of man) came back once in this parable and then sorted the sheep and the goats, he did not come back twice like the rapture myth tells.

4.3 Will Jesus really only be in the air when he comes back?

[Matthew 25:31](#) says right before talking about the sheep and the goats 'When the Son of man shall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then shall he sit upon the throne of his glory:' When Jesus comes back, he is not going to just 'hang out' in the sky and go back to heaven like the myth says. In [2 Peter 3:10](#) it says 'But the day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night; in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up.' Does that sound to you like Jesus will be coming a third time after this next time? Or do you think that the next

time he comes back is not called 'the day of the Lord', but the supposed 2nd time he comes back is called 'the day of the Lord'?

4.4 What about the tribulation then?

Did God take Israel out of Egypt before the plagues were started or after they were finished? After all of the plagues were finished, God took Israel out of Egypt. Did God protect Israel while the plagues were happening? Yes. Did God take Noah off of the earth in a space ship during the global flood? No, he was in a boat on the ocean which was probably full of big waves and lots of rain. Was Noah protected? Yes. This is the same kind of situation we will have during the plagues and troubles of Revelation during the 'tribulation'.

Does it matter how long the tribulation lasts? Do we need to make a timeline and worry if we made mistakes? No, because we will either be going where God says, and doing what God says, or we will risk not having his protection. God will either tell us how much longer the 'tribulation' is, or he won't, it all depends on what we need to know. It really doesn't matter how long it will be, or when it will be, unless he tells us otherwise.

Will worrying about the 'tribulation' change anything? If you 'figure' it all out, is it going to help you refuse the mark of the beast? No, because you should already know even now to refuse it. Does it matter who the beast is? No, you will know who he is when God wants you to know who he is, you don't need to know yet because you can't do anything about it anyway can you?

Also, did God save Daniel from the fiery furnace or protect him? He protected him in it. Did God keep Joseph out of jail or did he turn it into good for him? He turned it into good. Is there any verses that says the saved people will be whisked away into the sky before the 'tribulation'? Nope. If you find one, let me know, but most likely all you will find is a verse you have to make huge inaccurate assumptions about, and even then it still won't prove the myth of the 'rapture'. (I

already knew about the Noah comparison but Doug Batchelor in this link below is a good teacher on this topic and reminded me about the Egypt plague comparison and others:)

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=i3hXKNTMuEY>

4.5 Will satan pretend that the rapture happened?

There are many opinions out there, and the Bible does not say exactly if the beast and devil will try to fake the rapture, but I believe, as many also believe, that the beast and the devil will try to pretend that Jesus came back. I suggest that you search this out for yourselves, because there are some things that may or may not happen. The key word that is used for this deceptive event is 'project blue-beam' or 'Bluebeam'. Search for that term and then decide what you want to believe. Keep in mind that much of the internet search algorithms are rigged so that most of the links you see are things that the globalists and leftists want to be seen.

Also remember that we do not need to know what the devil and the beast will do, other than what Revelation tells us. We have been, and will be told what we need to know. [Matthew 24:21-24](#) says 'For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be. And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened. Then if any man shall say unto you, Lo, here *is* Christ, or there; believe *it* not. For there shall arise false Christs, and false prophets, and shall shew great signs and wonders; insomuch that, if *it were* possible, they shall deceive the very elect.' This hints to me that the devil will try to fake our messiah's return so that he can try to rule in Jerusalem (Because Jesus will again rule from Jerusalem). I have heard that the devil's servants will put holograms in the sky using lasers, and with advanced sound technology that can make us all hear sound coming from the sky (from

airplanes or maybe even satellites). When Jesus comes back, we will know it beyond any doubt. We will not need a person to tell us that he is here, because we will see Jesus, and hear him, and feel, and know that it is really him. If there is any doubt in you, then it is not Jesus, and it is a sign or technological thing done by satan. [1 Thessalonians 4:16-18](#) says 'For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Christ shall rise first: Then we which are alive *and* remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord. Wherefore comfort one another with these words.' So when Jesus comes back, we will see him, and he will bring us up to him along with the dead in Christ. It is clearly something that we will know for sure when it happens. We will not be taken to 'heaven' at this time. We will stay on Earth with Jesus like the Bible says. After the thousand years with Jesus, then we will probably be given the chance to explore the universe for eternity, in my opinion.

[Matthew 24:26](#) says 'Wherefore if they shall say unto you, Behold, he is in the desert; go not forth: behold, *he is* in the secret chambers; believe *it not*.' [2 Thessalonians 1:7-8](#) says 'And to you who are troubled rest with us, when the Lord Jesus shall be revealed from heaven with his mighty angels, In flaming fire taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the gospel of our Lord Jesus Christ:' So when he comes back, he is also going to deal with the wicked people, just like the parable of the wheat and the tares tells us that the tares will be bound to be burned. If and when satan fakes the return of Jesus, is satan going to kill his own servants also so that we think Jesus is dealing with wicked people? It is possible, satan even tells the truth sometimes so that he can get us to believe a bigger lie. He could kill some of his followers to try and fake it, but again we will know for sure when Jesus comes back, we don't need to know everything that the devil will do. Sometimes we do need to know how the devil operates, and what kinds of tricks he plays, but that is up to God to show us. If you believe that God wants you to study

those kinds of things then pray about it that you will know what to do. Be carefull not to get decieved by satan's false religions and satanism itself.

4.6 When will Jesus come back?

One of the big pastimes, or rather, waste of times, that many Christians partake in, is the predictions of when Jesus will come back. In [Matthew 24:36](#) it says 'But of that day and hour knoweth no *man*, no, not the angels of heaven, but my Father only.' You should read all of [Matthew chapter 24](#), but this verse is talking about when Jesus comes back. Does it say that he will come back two more times? No. It seems there are a lot of ignorant people who have not read this verse, or who have misread it, or who have twisted this verse to mean something else, because there are many people who despite this verse, have made public predictions of when the 'rapture' would happen, even predicting the day that it would happen. It is absolutely sure that if an unwise person predicts the day when Jesus will come back, that he is wrong and is either an agent of satan, or he is a false prophet. Why are so many Christians gullible enough to believe these people who make these predictions? Because most Christians either have not read all of [Matthew](#), or they think they are not smart enough to understand the Bible because they have not gone to a college.

Before I was a teen, before I read all of the [King James version](#) of the Bible, I believed one or more of these rapture predictions that false prophets made. These false prophets can cause people who believe them to make poor choices, and then be disappointed when their prediction does not happen.

God can give anyone wisdom and discernment, all we have to do is ask God, and he will give us our portion according to his will. Solomon in the Old Testament even did this. God said to him in [2 Chronicles 1:7](#) 'Ask what i shall give thee.' and in [verses 8-10](#) it says 'And Solomon said unto God, Thou hast shewed great mercy unto David my father, and hast made me to reign in his stead. Now, O LORD God, let thy

promise unto David my father be established: for thou hast made me king over a people like the dust of the earth in multitude. Give me now wisdom and knowledge, that I may go out and come in before this people: for who can judge this thy people, *that is so great?*' God did indeed give Solomon wisdom, and then Solomon later wrote the proverbs and other writings. Does God only give wisdom to kings? No, I believe that God will give wisdom and discernment and knowledge to anyone who asks him honestly.

So then why do so many people try to predict when Jesus will come back, when the Bible says we will not know the day or the hour? Because they either want to use and manipulate people in order to sell books or get donations, or they want media attention, or they want to deceive people, or they really think they can find the date so that they 'will be ready' at that time. But the Bible tells us to always be ready. [Matthew 24:44](#) says 'Therefore be ye also ready: for in such an hour as ye think not the Son of man cometh.' When should we be ready? It seems to me that God wants us to be ready now. Also the parable of the ten virgins covers this same topic of Jesus returning, it is in [Matthew chapter 25](#), I recommend that you read it if you have not yet, or if you forgot some of it.

We should not waste our time making and studying timelines of Daniel, or Revelation, just to try to figure out when Jesus will come back. Now I myself have even written a timeline in order to know around what year the creation week was, and the flood, and other things, and this timeline also did give me insight of when I think Jesus will come back, but I am not going to say here what year I think it will be, because it is pointless to say so. We should be ready now, not in the future. We do not need to try to figure out when he will come back, because if we need to know when he will come back, than God will make sure that we know. We do not have to waste hours and hours making erroneous timelines when we could be using that time to start a ministry that actually helps people and does not give them false hopes that will then disappoint them or destroy their faith. Do you want to give people hope or do you want to make a timeline that might damage the faith of saints

when they see that you made mistakes?

You might ask "You made a timeline you said, doesn't that make you a hypocrite?" There are a few differences how I approached my timeline than how most people do it. First, I was given an age-of-the-earth sort of list that gave Biblical verses all linked together to show how old the Earth is, which is important to know IMO. Second, I wanted to verify it if it was true, and in the process I found an error in it and fixed it, and proved that that list does show the age of the Earth. Third, in the process of making that timeline, I then saw that I could make a prediction of the year and even month of when Jesus came back, using my chart. But, I even still know that I could be wrong in my year predictions, because all it takes is one important date in my list to be wrong. It really is not that important when he comes back, because we should be getting right with God now.

Agents of satan have a long list of topics they try to convince people of on the internet. They not only cause the publishing of false predictions for the 'rapture', but they also try to convince people that the earth is flat, that space is water, that life is just a computer simulation, that there were ancient aliens, and so much more. Their main goal seems to be to separate us from our friends and family even more than we already are, because when we might believe one of these lies, we might try to also convince them. Then we we find something true, and we try to tell those same people, they might not believe us because we might have already tried to convince them of lies that we thought were true. The goal of the adversary also seems to be to cloud our judgment, and make it so that we can no longer discern what is true or real anymore, and to cause us to doubt God. We need to ask God to show us the truth about these things that we are investigating on the internet. We need to ask God to give us true discernment. Many of us have fallen for these rapture prediction scams at least once in our lives.

If you have been scammed by these agents online who make these kinds of videos (some might be real people who are just in error and not purposefully deceitful), please do not

blame Christians in general, or God, or Jesus, because if we fall for these prediction scams, we only have ourselves to blame, because we failed to read the Bible and believe it. If we read those parts that talked about the second coming in the Bible, and put it in our hearts, and were diligent in guarding our thoughts, we would not have been fooled. Don't let these agents and satan cause you to be mad at God because you fell for one of these online lies. If we find one rotten apple on a tree, it does not mean that the tree is bad, or the that the other apples are bad.

Chapter 5 Revelation

5.1 Do we know it all?

There are many Christians who have timelines and books and theories written all about the book of Revelation in the Bible. They think they have the 'rapture' all figured out, they think they know when Jesus will come back because they have all of their timelines in order, they know how the seals and the bowls and the trumpets will be, and they even figured out who the two witnesses are. Yet none of that really helps them in their daily life does it? And what if they are wrong in their assumptions and calculations? Then some or most of their work was in vain. It is good to study the Bible, so at least they were doing that.

5.2 The Basics

I have given up trying to figure out the things in revelation even by 2011. As time went on from there I kept realizing how much we do not need to know those things yet. However, we do need to know the basics, like, we need to reject the mark of the beast, what the beast's number is, and so forth. I am not trying to brag here or say that I am better than anyone. I was fortunate that God brought a friend in my life who showed me the wisdom that we do not need to know all of these timeline details down to a minutia, and we don't need to know precise dates, or even years.

5.3 Revelation Theories

With so many theories out there about Revelation, I might as well add mine! I do have a reason why I am putting my theories here, which I will reveal soon. Most people either

outright say that God will be the one doing the plagues and destruction on the earth in Revelation. However, I see the seals that the Lamb opened in [Revelation 6](#) as being the protections over the earth that controlled satan and kept him from damaging parts of the earth and its inhabitants. With each seal being opened by Jesus, satan is able to then do more because the protections over the earth were removed. One of the many myths about Revelation that most Christians believe, is that the anti-Christ will just suddenly gain world domination, as in, he had almost no control over the world but then all of a sudden he would control almost the entire world.

It is very clear that satan has actually owned most of the world even when Jesus was here to die for us. [Matthew 4:8-9](#) says 'Again, the devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them; And saith unto him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me.' Do you think that satan would lie to Jesus about what satan owned? Jesus would not have been fooled. Satan would not have offered Jesus all of his kingdoms if he could not give them to Jesus. It was not an idle offer. It was a real temptation that Jesus could have accepted if he wanted to, but Jesus chose to obey God. Do you really think satan would have given up any of those kingdoms he owned 2000 years ago? Just because kings and governments change, it does not mean that satan has lost control of any of those land masses. It is rather irrational to think that satan could go from owning nothing to owning most of the world in just a few years in Revelation. It makes more sense that satan already owns most of the world now, but he just does not have permission yet to destroy everything. That is what these seals in revelation are about, protecting us from satan until a set time. So, I believe that all of these things done after each seal is opened, is actually satan doing them.

Seal 1 represents all of the wars since Jesus died for us and was resurrected (yes, most of the seals have already been opened, and the effects are ongoing).

Seal 2 is also about war but it is specifically the divide and conquer doctrine that satan loves. He gets people to fight

each other so that it is easier for him to control everything, since people then do not look at him as being the enemy but they look at the other person they are fighting. These entities that are divided are not just nations, but also groups of people by race, religion, age, sex, and so forth.

Seal 3 might be global financial regulations like tariffs or currency differences and so forth. It might also be a hint about the huge separation between rich people and poor people now, with most of the world being poor. It might also be about government aid such as snap or food stamps being given but then people cannot afford oil and wine.

Seal 4 represents the 1900's and beyond. Never before has there been so many wars and so many exterminations like what hitler and mao did. There is and has been massive starvation in the world for decades but we almost never hear about it because most of the news agencies are controlled by satan.

Seal 5 represents the martyrs that were killed for being Christians or Jewish. Hitler killed Christians and Jews, China has at least severely persecuted them if not killed them, most of the radical Muslim nations continually and actively kill Christians and Jews, and the list goes on and on. Again, we do not hear about most of these killings of Christians because the media has their own agenda's in what they want to say. There has never been a time where so many people have been, and are being killed for following God and Jesus.

Seal 6 and 7th seal have not happened yet in my belief, and will happen during the 'last days'.

5.4 Are you Angry at God?

The main reason why I wanted to tell my theory about the seals here is because it might keep some people from getting mad at God for things that satan is actually doing. In other words, some people might read Revelation and get mad at God and ask him why he is doing all of those things, when it seems to actually be satan doing them. Sure, God allows it by

having Jesus open the seals, but there is a difference, and that difference is important.

5.5 Is there a seven year tribulation?

The important answer is, it doesn't matter. If and when it were to matter to us to know the answer, God will tell us. It seems that the only verse that can even remotely have a chance of showing a seven year 'tribulation' is [Daniel 9:27](#) which says 'And he shall confirm the covenant with many for one week: and in the midst of the week he shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease, and for the overspreading of abominations he shall make *it* desolate, even until the consummation, and that determined shall be poured upon the desolate.' But this verse is talking about weeks, not years. So for this verse to really be talking about seven years might be a big stretch. Also, the stopping of sacrifices in the middle of the 'week' is not consistent with anything in Revelation. There are some verses that might refer to a 'tribulation' type of period that describe either 1260 days, 42 months, "a time, times, and a half time", 1290 days, or 1335 days in Daniel and Revelation. So, perhaps there is some kind of 'tribulation' period that might last three and a half years sometime before Jesus comes back.

Again, these things are not that important to know yet for most of us, because when the beast, anti-Christ, and false prophet start doing their things in public, it will probably be just a few years before Jesus comes back then anyway. And really, what benefit is there to knowing the exact times and periods? So that we can be lazy or sinful until the very end?

5.6 Buy their stuff?

I wonder just how many authors, movie directors, music artists, slideshow presenters, lecturers, teachers, pastors, and others have specifically chosen the topic of Revelation, just so that they can make money, because they know that 'end times'

topics captivate people so much. When they explain their theories, maybe it makes them feel smart and important. Most people do not read all of the Bible, so they are easy to fool. Even some of the people who have read all of the Bible are not brave enough to question the beliefs of 'important' and 'respected' teachers and 'leaders'. Most people want to fit in with the other sheep. They don't want to be left out in the cold by saying they question the popular beliefs. If people were to read all of the Bible, and then come back and reread all of the sections that might possibly be about the end times without any preconceived ideas, or at least with an open-mind, then they would be able to see this topic much more clearly. This reminds me of how some modern scientists try to make theories about quantum physics, relativity, or other things, so that everyone will think that they they are smart, even when the author themselves often don't even believe their own theory. When they make those theories, they often don't even care if they are correct or not, but instead they care about how good they look to others, and how much their status will be promoted.

Chapter 6 Health

6.1 Is drinking alcohol a sin?

You might not like my answer but you should read all of this chapter, because you may be surprised with my answers to these topics. Pretty much every Christian denomination believes that drinking any amount of alcohol is a sin. They also believe that Jesus didn't actually turn water into wine, but into grape juice. This is despite the verses clearly saying wine in the King James version. In [John chapter 2](#), the water into wine miracles happened. In verse 3 it says 'And when they wanted wine, the mother of Jesus saith unto him, They have no wine.' Do you think that they wanted grape juice at a wedding? In verse 10, the ruler of the feast said 'And saith unto him, Every man at the beginning doth set forth good wine; and when men have well drunk, then that which is worse: *but* thou hast kept the good wine until now.' Do you think that 'well drunk' refers to grape juice? Do you think there is a difference between good 'grape juice' and 'not so good grape juice'? Isn't all grape juice pretty much the same? Do you think that grape juice needs to be aged to make it better like wine does? I have never heard such a thing. If drinking alcohol was a sin, why would Jesus make wine for people? Let's have the Bible answer that.

[1 Samuel 25:36-37](#) is also proof that H3196 (wine) is actual wine with alcohol, and not the mythical “grape juice” that some people try to say that it is.

6.2 What does the Bible say about alcohol?

[1 Peter 4:3](#) says 'For the time past of *our* life may suffice us to have wrought the will of the Gentiles, when we walked in lasciviousness, lusts, excess of wine, revellings,

banquetings, and abominable idolatries:' It says 'excess', it does not forbid drinking a small amount of wine here, to assume so is not wise. [1 Tim 5:23](#) says 'Drink no longer water, but use a little wine for thy stomach's sake and thine often infirmities.' Doesn't this sound like it is ok to have a little bit of wine?

[Ecclesiastes 9:7](#) says 'Go thy way, eat thy bread with joy, and drink thy wine with a merry heart; for God now accepteth thy works.' So we should not worry if we have a little wine, right?

[Ephesians 5:18](#) says 'And be not drunk with wine, wherein is excess; but be filled with the Spirit;' So we should not get drunk. [Proverbs 31:4](#) says '*It is* not for kings, O Lemuel, *it is* not for kings to drink wine; nor for princes strong drink:' So Kings or leaders should not drink any alcohol. This makes sense because they need a clear head to make decisions with.

[Psalm 104:15](#) says 'And wine *that* maketh glad the heart of man, *and* oil to make *his* face to shine, and bread *which* strengtheneth man's heart.' So wine can be used to make us glad but we should not get drunk. You should read all of [Romans 14](#). [Romans 14:21](#) says '*It is* good neither to eat flesh, nor to drink wine, nor *any thing* whereby thy brother stumbleth, or is offended, or is made weak.' This does not mean it is a sin to drink wine, only that for example, if you are visiting a brother in his house, and he is easily offended and thinks that it is a sin to drink alcohol, then you should not drink alcohol in his house or try to convince him that alcohol is ok to drink.

<https://www.biblestudytools.com/topical-verses/bible-verses-about-drinking-alcohol/>

6.3 What health problems can alcohol cause?

(I am not a doctor, these are my beliefs) Most alcoholic beverages also contain toxic substances such as flavor chemicals, sulfites, formaldehyde, and other chemical preservatives. Over time, these chemicals and toxins can

severely damage the kidneys, stomach, other digestive and blood filtering organs, and even the brain. Alcohol even by itself with no other chemicals or toxins can cause inflammation of muscles, dehydration, and the removal of vitamins and minerals from the body because the body has to use them to deal with the effects of the alcohol. Most alcohol is made with hops, grapes, or other ingredients that are covered in pesticides and other farm based chemicals. Those chemicals are hard to remove, so pretty much all brewers do not even bother, if they even care. That means that most alcoholic beverages also contain traces of toxic pesticides in them. Even if you could find an organic alcoholic beverage that has no added chemicals or toxins, you would still have some possible inflammation, dehydration, and loss of vitamins and minerals from your body. For example, for people who are recovering from a hernia or other muscle damage, even a surgery, they should not drink any alcohol in my opinion.

6.4 Is drinking alcohol worth it?

It may not be a sin to drink alcohol for some people, for some situations, but is it worth it? Alcohol can cause us to make poor choices that we might not normally make. It can also cause us to be even more depressed or more sad later on in the night, or even the next day while trying to recover from a 'hang over'. Also the added cost to a person's budget is something to think about.

One exception might be with Communion. The wine of communion that symbolizes the blood of Jesus is probably ok if it actually contains alcohol via natural fermentation.

6.5 What About Smoking?

There are no verses that mention smoking tobacco in the Bible. So, I would guess that in that sense it is not a direct sin by itself. However, smoking cigarettes does damage our

lungs and other organs. Is it a sin to damage our own bodies? I would say that it is. Clearly it is not as immediately harmful as other sins, but over time it can really damage a persons body. Again, like alcohol, most cigarettes are full of toxic additives that the manufacturers add to make people addicted to the cigarettes even more than just the nicotine can do. These toxins over time can cause severe lung problems, or problems with other organs. Even if you could find an organic cigarette without any additives, you are still breathing smoke into your lungs which could leave a residue in your lungs that cannot be easily removed. If your lungs cannot supply enough oxygen to your blood, you will feel more fatigued, you might have to breath harder, and so forth.

6.6 What About Caffeine?

Some denominations like the Seventh Day Adventists claim that drinking Caffeine is a sin or is wrong. This is based on Ellen G. White's writings, whom most of them hold up as a prophet. Some of them even hold her writings up as being equal with the Bible (without admitting it). Clearly the Bible does not mention Caffeine. Does Caffeine damage our bodies? That is debatable. One problem is that people who study Caffeine and especially coffee, often study Coffee or Tea that is full of pesticides, preservatives, and other chemicals. They almost never study organic Coffee or Tea, which would not have pesticides (maybe traces of it if the land once had pesticides used on it) on it. For example, when I drink non-organic coffee or tea, I can quickly get a stomach ache, a headache, or my thinking is not as clear, etc. This is because of the pesticides and other chemicals in the non-organic coffee or tea.

It is clear that caffeine can cause us to need more water in order to flush the caffeine out of our bodies. As far as if caffeine really hurts our bodies, I am not sure. I have heard people claim that it hurts us, and some claim it helps us. Clearly it also raises our heart rate, which might be part of why it is a stimulant. Does this also mean that caffeine is a poison of

some kind and this is why it is raising our heart rates? I don't know. People with heart trouble might want to avoid caffeine, as most doctors would recommend.

6.7 Should we shun people who smoke, or drink alcohol or caffeine?

One way to get people to leave a church or a group of friends is to nag them so much that they do not want to be around you anymore. If even half of the time that you see a friend who drinks or smokes ends up with a discussion or a nag about smoking or drinking (or maybe even caffeine), I would be confident in guessing that that friend will start to avoid you. The only way a person can quit one of these addictive things, is by first deciding to quit. No amount of nagging will make a person decide to quit, unless if they are very weak minded and easily controlled. If a person does truly decide they will quit, and give 100% effort, they will need loving support, not nagging. They will need grace and not rebuke for times when they might mess up and smoke or drink. I really doubt that a strong and harsh lecture will help most people, but instead it would cause most people to want to avoid you.

A church of course has a right to say that no alcohol can be consumed on their grounds, and that is fine, but to shun a person who drinks at home seems uncaring and not right to me. I wonder how many fine leaders have been forced out of positions in churches just because they have trouble giving up smoking or drinking. And who takes their place? Maybe a person who is mostly just there for the paycheck, or who manipulates others to get things they want, or maybe even worse. There are times when we just need to put things into perspective, and evaluated things by the big picture, and not focus on one issue, and blow it out of proportion. If an alcoholic is violent and hurting other people, than clearly it is a big issue. What I am talking about are situations where there really are no victims. Of course your friend or loved one is

hurting their own body, but they are probably not going to die tomorrow right? You cannot change their mind if you haven't already. Sometimes all we can do is let go and pray.

6.8 what is the origin of 12 step programs?

According to the website below, the 12 step program is over 70 years old. Over time this program has been brought into the churches with only minimal changes. Most of them are essentially the same program with a few word changes. Some churches have weekday 12 step meetings where they mix in some worship time along with people giving testimonies relating to the 12 step program, or some other kind of teaching or video watching related to the program. In the attempt to get as many people joining these meetings as possible, the 12 step programs are said to help with much more than just addictions. It is to the point where even people with no addictions would still have something 'wrong' in their life that the 12 step program can 'help' with.

<http://www.12step.com/history>

6.9 Do I need a 12 step program?

No. Look at step 3 which says '*Made a decision to turn our will and our lives over to the care of God as we understood Him.*' We should give ourselves to God and Jesus even if we do not understand Jesus or God. Our understanding should have nothing to do with it. We need God's will regardless of what we understand. Are there some good things in the 12 step program? Sure, but the wrong things in them can do far too much damage, for example, by creating perpetual failure and dependance on the program. The last step says '*Having had a spiritual awakening as the result of these steps, we tried to carry this message to alcoholics, and to practice these principles in all our affairs.*' This is how the program spreads,

by word of mouth. More victims are needed for the program.

If God tells you to attend 12 step meetings, then you should go to them, and surely God can turn the bad in it to good to help you, but I doubt that situation would happen very often where God would tell somebody to go to one, unless perhaps for witnessing purposes. Sure, the program could even help a few people to quit an addiction. If you do go to one of them, at least filter out some of the negative things it teaches like how they think you will never fully be healed, and so forth. I am not at all saying that people who develop or teach 12 step programs are bad people, but there are bad aspects within the programs, and these bad aspects are what I am trying to help you to avoid. There may be some people at the top of the system, who understand the negative aspects of the program, and still encourage it's use. While that is possible, it is not something I am going to assume.

When I use the term 'victim' in this chapter, it is the system that is making the victims, not necessarily the people running the system.

6.10 What are the success rates of the 12-step programs?

I ignored any published 'success rates' that were 'reported' by any entity that has any stake in the success of the 12 step program. In other words, I wanted to hear success rates that were evaluated by groups or individuals who had nothing to gain by posting inaccurate information. It seems that it is impossible to find a study that is accurate due to the anonymous nature of Alcoholics Anonymous (AA) and related 12 step programs. Either studies of it's member's success rates are refused to be done by private organizations, or inflated by the sponsoring group, and so forth. For example, AA's own study show that only about one-third of the members actually had any form of sobriety from the program. Of course, since this is a study aimed at increasing their members, I personally

do not trust the accuracy of this study. I would guess that a more accurate study would show significantly lower success rates.

Another concept is that the success rates obviously cannot be too good, because if the 12 step programs were often effective in 'curing' people, then there would be much less people attending the meetings. A bad executive at the top of the company structure would be tempted to make sure that the success rate is low enough to keep people coming back every week, maybe even for years. If a person gets 'cured' why would they come back? Maybe a few would come back to help others, but I would guess that not many would, because for most of us, our free time is precious.

6.11 What are the psychological effects of doing the 12 step program?

The interesting thing about the program is that it proclaims that people can recover from addictions, but also that the person is essentially powerless without the program, and thus must attend groups and read books even after they quit their addiction. Just like the modern medical establishment, the 12 step program pins labels on the victim (yes I am going to use this term) and tells them they will never fully be cured, even if they quit their addiction. For example, they would tell an alcoholic, that even if they quit drinking alcohol, they have a brain disorder, and could easily fall back into drinking at any time, and so they must continue classes and continue buying the latest media and self-help aids.

The very first step says (for AA anyway) '*We admitted we were powerless over alcohol – that our lives had become unmanageable.*' This is meant to be the first step because the victim is meant to think they are powerless, and that they will never be free, but needs constant help from the program. This is the step that establishes control over the victim. Any money that the victim donates to the program, or any books or

products they buy from the program, is used to advertise and to make even more media and products to sell, in order to keep a perpetual income for the program. Although there is some common sense in the program, like, an alcoholic should indeed avoid going to bars or 'hanging out' with people who will be drinking, the biggest problem with the program is that it wants it's members to always come back and bring friends, so the program does not want to say that a person is cured or could ever be cured.

There should be green grass in the future for the minds of the members. For example, their goal should of course be to quit their addiction, but once they do, they should not stress about it and continue to think they have a mental disorder. They need to realize there is healing for addictions. If they cannot quit on their own, God can help them to quit.
<http://www.12step.com/12steps/>

6.12 How can I get better if I don't use the 12-step program?

Although there are some strong willed people who can quit an addiction and stay away from it for good, most people need help. So then, who can help? Asking God and Jesus to help you quit an addiction is the best method. They can reduce or remove the chemical addiction, and reduce or remove the emotional addictions. God can heal a person immediately, or he may choose to have the person quit slowly over time by reducing how much a person drinks each day, in the case of alcoholism. There are many ways and many skills to use to quit an addiction. For smoking, for example, a person could reduce the amount of cigarettes they smoke each week until they get to 1 cigarette per day, then eventually change to gum or candy or some non-nicotine habit.

One difficult thing about addictions, is that it is not just the chemical addiction a person has to deal with. They also need to deal with the loss of a habit that soothed them

emotionally. Part of the process of quitting an addiction may need to include a new hobby or activity that replaces the old habit related to the addiction. It is not just a matter of avoiding an addictive chemical or action, but also our thoughts and activities need to change.

God and Jesus need to be the one who we look to for help, and we need to know that they can help us to eventually be free from addiction. We need to know that we probably do not have a mental disorder directly related to an addiction, and that we really can be free of addictions. These labels are made up by groups of 'experts' like the one that made the DSM (Diagnostic and Statistical Manual). There are so many verses in the Bible that directly say that God and Jesus are our healers, but here is one of them: [Malachi 4:2](#) says 'But unto you that fear my name shall the Sun of righteousness arise with healing in his wings; and ye shall go forth, and grow up as calves of the stall.' However, the second step in the 12 step program is '*Came to believe that a Power greater than ourselves could restore us to sanity.*' So, the 12 step victims are led to believe that God cannot heal them of their addiction, but can only give them sanity while they are addicted. Pray and read the Bible every day. Ask God to help you to find things that you can do to make quitting easier (if you are addicted).

(Again, I am not a doctor) There are even herbal remedies that can reduce nicotine cravings for example. Eating healthy, exercising, getting enough sleep, avoiding harmful chemicals in food, drinks, and even household supplies can greatly help with quitting an addiction. This is because of many reasons, but essentially the better condition your brain is in, and if it has no other addictive chemicals interfering in it, then your brain will be able to fight off the addiction cravings easier. Even getting some sunlight each day will help put you into a better mood, and even a better mood will help you. So, rely on God and Jesus and keep finding methods to make it easier to quit an addiction.

<https://medical-dictionary.thefreedictionary.com/DSM-IV>

6.13 Should I trust pharmakeia?

In [Luke 8:43-44](#) (read all of the chapter if you want) there is a hint to us about what may have been happening in the medical field while Jesus was in Israel. In [verse 43-44](#) it says “And a woman having an issue of blood twelve years, which had spent all her living upon physicians, neither could be healed of any, Came behind *him*, and touched the border of his garment: and immediately her issue of blood stanchèd.” The physicians of that time could not help her? Why? Was it because she had some incurable affliction? I think it was because the physicians do things like how they do now in modern times. They are not taught how to help people recover, but instead are taught how to make lifelong patients. They wait patiently thinking one day they will be better, from the help of physicians.

I recommend that you look at the link below for the word G5331 pharmakeia. I believe that most of the modern “health care” and “medical” systems in most of the world are very corrupt, and designed to make continual profits while making and keeping people sick, or even by killing them or allowing them to die. Preventing real recovery methods is often the goal of the people in control of these systems, in order to keep people sick and in debt.

<https://www.blueletterbible.org/lang/lexicon/lexicon.cfm?Strongs=G5331&t=KJV>

The modern medical system is very skilled at resetting bones, and various kinds of surgery, but that is about the only things they do now that actually help people. However, many surgeries are not even needed, and could have been avoided if proper eating habits were adopted, and sometimes herbal remedies.

6.14 Should I care about my health?

We should try to take care of the bodies that God gave us. [1 Corinthians 6:19-20](#) says 'What? know ye not that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost *which is* in you, which ye

have of God, and ye are not your own? For ye are bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God's.' We should be careful about the food we eat and what we drink. There are many added chemical ingredients in most of our food, water, and other beverages. These added chemicals and toxins can add up over time and overwhelm our bodies ability to deal with them. Just a few of them would not do much to us, but if everything we eat and drink has some bad things in them or do bad things to our bodies and then we can start to have health problems.

We can find organic, non-genetically modified foods to reduce our exposure to pesticides, chemical fertilizer residue, and other toxins. We can try to find real spring or well water that is not contaminated. We can watch how much sugar and unhealthy fats we consume. We can make sure that we get enough sleep and sunlight. We can make sure we drink enough water and take plant based supplements if we need to. We can exercise if we need it. There are many things we can do to get healthier and feel better. God provided the plants we need to help us feel better.

There are also many chemicals in household products, even fabric softeners and perfumes and deoderizers that can damage our health. Companies who do not care about the health of their customers might be tempted to pay for inaccurate studies to be done, or use loopholes to get their product into the market without much care as to what damage their chemicals can do to people.

6.15 Should I fast?

I believe that when the Old Testament mentions afflicting our souls on the day of Atonement, it was referring to fasting for a day. In [Joel 2:12](#) 'Therefore also now, saith the LORD, turn ye *even* to me with all your heart, and with fasting, and with weeping, and with mourning:' In [Matthew 6:16](#) it says 'Moreover when ye fast, be not, as the hypocrites, of a sad countenance: for they disfigure their faces, that they may

appear unto men to fast. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward.'

When should we fast? The only time-frame for fasting that I know of in the Bible is for probably for the feast of Atonement when it says to 'afflict your souls' in [Numbers 29:7](#) saying 'And ye shall have on the tenth *day* of this seventh month an holy convocation; and ye shall afflict your souls: ye shall not do any work *therein*.' Some people debate what afflicting our souls here means, but it is clear to me that it means fasting, and possibly even abstaining from things we desire that, which we do not need, for that one day of Atonement.

In [Daniel 10:3](#) it says 'I ate no pleasant bread, neither came flesh nor wine in my mouth, neither did I anoint myself at all, till three whole weeks were fulfilled.' It seems that Daniel might have been on a water only fast here. In [Matthew 4:2](#) it says 'And when he had fasted forty days and forty nights, he was afterward an hungred.' This seems clear here that Jesus was not hungry during these 40 days and 40 nights, and was also not eating. How can this be?

Herbert M. Shelton wrote a book called 'Fasting can save your life'. In it, it describes how the author has supervised many many people during their water only fasts for weeks at a time. From his descriptions, I would guess that the average person fasted for about three weeks with only water. I personally have done water only fasts and it helped to alleviate some health problems I had. I am not a doctor, and I am not an expert in fasting, nor am I making claims that fasting can 'cure' things, so please do not use this alone as a reason to fast, you should talk to a professional or read a book from a professional before undertaking any fast.

To sum up what the author explains in the book, is that after a couple of days of only having water, most people stop feeling hungry. Then the body undergoes a detoxing process where it pulls chemicals and toxins from the body and passes it out when the person goes to the bathroom. Herbert warns that people with serious medical conditions or who have kidney or heart problems might not be able to fast this way. Most people

seem to lose about 2 pounds per day on average, going by his descriptions. Once the body realizes that it has little or no fat reserves left, it will start the stomach back into a hunger phase so as to cause the person to seek food. This is so that the person can start eating before the body is forced to use muscle, or worse, organ tissue to stay alive. Herbert describes that starvation does not really start to occur until the body is depleted of fat. The phase when the body is living of fat is not starvation.

I have heard that even Eskimos used to purposely over eat because sometimes they had to go without eating for a while. Herbert describes that when some animals get severely hurt, they will seek a warm place and rest there without eating until they recover. During that time, their body heals faster than normal because their digestive system is no longer burning resources to digest, filter, and disperse nutrients, and instead can convert fat which is a much quicker and efficient 'fuel' source. This also frees up the kidneys and other filter and support organs to start processing the toxins in the body. Herbert did not say this, but it is my theory that the fat tissue also stores essential vitamins and minerals that the body might need during times of fasting. This is because normally, if I didn't eat a banana a day, my muscles would ache. If I didn't get enough magnesium my eyes would twitch. If I didn't get enough citrus, my nails would get 'hang nails', if I did not get enough protein, I felt sore and weak in my muscles. This means there must be some way for the body to still get the vitamins it needs every day without cannibalizing the rest of it's own body. This may be different for a person who was suffering from malnutrition, and has been without key vitamins for a very long period of time. A person in that situation might not have the needed vitamins and minerals stored in the fat reserves of their body, and if they were to fast for a long period of time, they might suffer more symptoms than most people, or they might see less recovery than normal during fasting.

Anyway, it could have been a miracle that Jesus was not hungry for 40 days and 40 nights, but it is my belief that the reason why he was not hungry was because of these kind of

body functions that happen during long period fasting that Herbert describes. If God does lead you to do a long term fast, I recommend that you read Herberts book, and also after your fast start looking into organic food, deionized water, reverse osmosis water, plant based vitamins, avoiding plastics and other chemicals, and so forth, in order to prevent the reoccurrence of health ailments after your fasting is done. I believe that fasting on its own does not 'cure' health ailments, but I believe that a body that has all of it's organs still working properly, and has all of the vitamins and minerals it needs, is able to fix itself at least to some degree, in some ways. It is much like how our bodies can heal a cut over time, all the body needs is the right supplies (sleep, time, vitamins, lack of toxins, ect).

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=1x8B1Z-X-G4&list=PLmniNzU13LX-SgU1kZ9i2nVLSuFDyz_Wa

6.16 How does God heal us?

Even in the Old Testament, the Bible tells us about many people who were physically healed by miracles from God. Of course, The New testament has many many testimonies of people being healed by Jesus also.

This being said, God does not only heal us by miracles. God invented the human body, and made it to be able to heal and renew itself when it is given the proper nutrients, rest, sunlight, water, and so forth. So, even if a person's health is improved after an extended fast for example, it is still God who helped to heal the person, because God is the one that made the human body, and the human DNA, to be able to repair itself.

It all comes down to what God's will is. Sometimes God heals a person miraculously who has drank, smoked, and ate junk food all of their lives, but for some people who have eaten healthy all of their lives, they may live with a serious physical ailment or problem all of their lives and never get a miraculous healing, or they may have to reduce their symptoms by going on a fast or taking a certain plant based supplement.

That brings up another topic. God also designed the plants of this world, and he made certain ones that can help our bodies to heal themselves faster and more efficiently than without that plant.

But, you might be asking why some people have not been healed yet but they ask God for healing. [1 Peter 2:24](#) says 'Who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree, that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: by whose stripes ye were healed.' Some people think that they can use this verse and just declare themselves healed in Jesus name, and it will immediately happen. For some people this may work, but it all depends on what the will of God is. For example, I believe that everyone should read the entire book of Job in the Old Testament if they want to better understand the will of God and trails in our lives.

When it comes to the "Why wasn't I healed yet?" question that some of us might have, I like many things that Joni Eareckson says in her book "A step Further". One example is how she explains a conversation with her friend Steve Estes and how he points out that Jesus did many miracles in order that people would know he was the Messiah. God used the apostles to heal people also, Steve says, so that they knew who were the real apostles were (because there were people claiming to be apostles or sent from God, who were not). This doesn't mean that God won't heal people now, and it doesn't mean they can only be healed at a church. God is the one who decides who gets healed, and when. Even if we are sure God is going to heal us, we won't know when unless God told us when. It all comes down to God's will and his plan for us. It might even cause some people to be saved if they witness the healing. If the person was healed a week before that, then that person wouldn't get saved. God can do miracles to lead people to get saved, but I think it might take certain kinds of miracles, and at the right time, for certain people to respond and accept Jesus as their savior.

6.17 When does God heal us?

Does God heal us the moment we say a verse and snap our fingers or shout at the devil in Jesus name? Does God do everything according to our faith when we pray? What if I declare that I will get a million dollars tomorrow in Jesus name? Is God then bound to give me a million dollars if I have the proper amount of faith? It is my strong opinion that God has a time and place for everything, and that his children snapping their fingers in prayer, does not mean that God has to do that thing at that very moment. It is my belief, that when we ask God for healing, or financial stability, or other reasonable things in our lives, that God will set a time and place in our future for that answer of prayer to happen. Perhaps certain things have to happen in our lives for us to learn certain things, so that we are a more understanding and compassionate person, or so forth.

Many of us have probably heard moving testimony from saved Christians who suffer from the loss of a limb, or blindness, or some other ailment, and while they are lecturing, they are still suffering. These kinds of sufferings are difficult to understand, and while their time of healing is probably still ahead in their future, God can use their current situation to witness and minister to other people. If it was just a lecturer who had good looks, money, fame, and so forth, would the same people listen to them and open their hearts to God's love and mercy? I recommend that you read all of [Ecclesiastes chapter 3](#).

There are lots of myths in modern Christianity like when people assume that if a person has not been healed then they must be sinning and God is displeased with them, or that they do not have enough faith and doubt that God can or will heal them. Often these myth believers blame the person who is suffering, because they believe the myth that all we have to do is have faith and snap our finger and Jesus will heal us. But these myth believers do not consider the will of God, or his timing for things in the future. Instead of admitting their myths, they usually prefer to cause the suffering person to feel guilty

that it is something they did wrong, as in, not having enough faith, or sinning. Of course we all should search ourselves and examine ourselves to see if we are sinning, and most of us probably need to ask God to help our faith grow.

Is God somebody who would withhold good things from his children? [Psalm 84:11](#) says 'For the LORD God *is* a sun and shield: the LORD will give grace and glory: no good *thing* will he withhold from them that walk uprightly.'

If you are suffering, and need healing, and have already asked God to heal you or to fix your problems, I urge you to be patient. Ask God to do his will in your life, and to show you the things you need to know. Trust that he has plans for your life and that he hears your prayers.

A good book to read about suffering and healing, or not being healed sometimes, is “A Step Further” by Joni Eareckson. She suffers from being paralyzed and explains why she believes she wasn't healed, even though she had faith and asked in the right way for healing, and felt that she had no rebellion in herself.

6.18 Are humans really omnivores?

Humans can eat meat, but it adds or increases many negative things to the human body, like the risk of heart disease, cancer, leaky gut, alzheimers, high cholesterol, diabetes, obesity, asthma, depression, and other health problems. In other words, humans are not optimized to eat meat, so it is inefficient, lacking in some essential nutrients, and causes some potential health problems. If meat is not fresh enough, it can start to rot before it leaves the very long digestive system, possibly making the human sick. Perhaps even some meat parasites are not able to be destroyed in the human stomach and may have to be dealt with by the immune system. Plants can help our bodies to heal itself, not just provide protein, vitamins, and minerals.

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=sXj76A9hI-o>

There is no such thing as an efficient omnivore, that can equally digest any plant or animal portions. If there is no concern for digestion efficiency with the classification of omnivore, and not a literal meaning of being able to digest everything (like bones, for example), then I would say that Humans are the closest to being omnivores. Because humans cannot digest bones and some other things, and lack efficiency with digesting meat products, I do not believe that they are omnivores.

6.19 But God said I could eat meat (after sin happened)!

That is true, but only the clean animals, only certain parts of the animals, and only by avoiding eating or drinking the blood. Some of the parts the laws and writings about diet are in [Leviticus 11](#) and [Deuteronomy 14](#).

If people want to eat meat, they should eat it in moderation, to ensure they eat enough fruits and vegetables to get enough nutrition, and to reduce ill health effects from eating meat.

6.20 But didn't Jesus eat fish?

In [Luke 24:41-43](#) it does seem that Jesus ate fish, but it is not absolute proof because he was given broiled fish and honeycomb. He could have just ate the honeycomb. If he did eat fish, it was fine for him to do so according to the Torah as long as it was a clean type of fish. If the fish was already killed before Jesus appears (and it seems so), then they didnt kill the fish for him. In [Luke 5:1-11](#) Jesus helped them to catch a lot of fish, and the two ships made it to shore, probably with the nets still in them, but we cannot be sure because they were about to sink from the weight. Maybe they let some fish go or maybe they let all of the fish go. These verses show that maybe there were partners in the other ship that stayed behind and sold

some of the fish, or maybe it was only three men total who all followed Jesus after that miracle. If they all followed Jesus then they must have emptied the nets. These verses are interesting but not proof that Jesus helped them to kill fish to sell or eat. Again, they were probably clean fish so even if they killed the fish Jesus helped them catch, it was allowed by the Torah, the first five books of the Bible. Jesus never rebuked anyone for eating fish as far as we know, because, again, it was allowed.

6.21 Should we take or accept vaccines?

As far as I know, every vaccine contains one or more of the following toxic ingredients: Mercury (thimerosal), formaldehyde, aluminum, human DNA (from fetal tissue or other human cells), blood cells (human, pig, or another animal), nano-particles, live viruses, and much more. If people think it is ok to inject themselves with toxins, then what about blood or blood cells?

You may want to read all of [Leviticus chapter 17](#), but to be brief, [Leviticus 17:12](#) says “Therefore I said unto the children of Israel, No soul of you shall eat blood, neither shall any stranger that sojourneth among you eat blood.”

[Deuteronomy 12:23](#) says “Only be sure that thou eat not the blood: for the blood *is* the life; and thou mayest not eat the life with the flesh.” If we are not suppose to eat blood, then are we allowed to inject it into ourselves? I believe that we should not. If its not ok to put blood in our mouths or stomachs, then why would it be ok to put it anywhere else in our bodies?

6.22 What is Grounding?

(I am not a doctor, so do not take this as medical advice) Our bodies are bio-electric, like a much better version of an electric-metal-plastic robot, and of course we are sentient

while robots can never have a soul. Our thoughts are actual frequencies of electron pulses in our brains, and our brains send electric pulses to our muscles to move them. There are even electrons in our individual cells. Electrons are the basis for electricity. When a cell in our body dies, our body processes the dead cell and tries to clean up and fix the area around it. Sometimes the dead cell can “leak” extra electrons into the body which some people call “free radicals”. These extra electrons can damage other cells in the body and this cascading effect can cause increased inflammation in the body.

If there is too much inflammation in the body more than one major symptom can/will appear and can even remain as if it was a permanent disease.

I will explain electricity and how it works with electronic devices. In modern homes, wall outlets and most extension cords and wires that plug into them, have a grounding wire in the cord. These grounding wires are designed for situations when there is too much electricity in the device due to electric surges from the power company, lightning, or shorts in the wires, electronics, or batteries of the device. That extra surge of electricity would have nowhere to go if there was no grounding wire, and the device that got the extra electricity would be ruined, or at least its fuses might be ruined. Grounding wires allow electric surges to go from the overburdened device, through the wall socket, and into the ground outside.

Almost every natural thing on the Earth is good at distributing electrical charges and evening them out so everything is balanced electrically. Water, sand, dirt, rocks, living plant leaves, buds, needles, and so much more will balance its electricity with the things around it, grounding it out.

Walking barefoot in nature, or using bare hands to touch living leaves, flowers, pine needles, water, etc, will allow extra electricity in our bodies to balance out with the ground around us, as long as the thing we are touching goes into ground that

can also conduct electricity.

Things that do not conduct electricity are dead pieces of wood, dead plants, thick dry bark, plastic, rubber, etc.

Supposedly there are sheets that people can buy that have wires in them and a plug in for the wall socket that lets the body be grounded while the person sleeps. I made my own wire into the ground with a nail and make sure to touch the wire while I sleep. I dont recommend that you do this unless you have a quick release latch on the wire to avoid strangling yourself or cutting off circulation if you toss and turn at night. If you do make your own grounding wire, use steel or copper (not aluminum) and make quick release latches that will unhook if there is more than a small amount of tension.

Even the day after I started sleeping while being grounded I started seeing skin improvements and had less hernia discomfort. A few days in and I had noticeably less zits, just by doing grounding.

Electro-Magnetic-Frequencies (EMF) can transfer through the air, ground, walls, and other objects into our bodies from electronic devices and power cables. Cell and radio towers, satellites, wi-fi, cell phones, microvave ovens, fluoesenct lights, LEDs, and many other things add to how much extra electricity enters our bodies. Sam Milham explains in his book (Dirty Electricity: Electrification and the Diseases of Civilization) and in the link below explains how many diseases can be caused by this extra electricity entering and staying in human bodies.

<https://www.bitchute.com/video/KAyYjJirJdbZ/> Dirty Electricity.....

When Adam and Eve were in the Garden of Eden before they sinned, they were naked ([Genesis 2:25](#)). This means that they had their bare feet touching the grass or dirt most of the day, at least while they were tending the garden. Touching grass or dirt with our skin allows us to become grounded with the Earth. This is very good evidence that God meant for us to be grounded with the Earth.

I am not sure how accurate the information in this paragraph about PH is, but it is interesting if true. Im not providing a link below because the guy I learned it from also talks about some psuedoscience IMO. Anyway, for liquids (and perhaps the human body), if it is giving off electrons (electricity), a negative - sign could be symbolically applied to say it is an electron donor (giving off electrons). If it is an electron stealer, it can be symbolized as having a positive, or plus + sign. A neutral electric value for water, when measured by a volt meter, means it has a PH of 7. A PH of 7.35 to 7.45, which is ideal for human bodies, is equal to -20 to -25 milivolts. There are probably ways to fix PH by eating certain foods, but the electrical state of the body seems to also be a factor, and diet alone might not be able to fix PH.

6.23 Should I eat dairy products?

There is at least one Christian denomination, and veganism in general that believes that humans should not drink milk. Not only does this false doctrine contradict biology, and how human babies are supposed to be breast fed milk by their mothers, it also contradicts the Bible.

[Genesis 18:8](#), [49:12](#), probably [Deuteronomy 32:14](#), and other places make it clear that we are able to drink milk. [2 Samuel 17:29](#) makes it clear that it is ok to eat cheese also.

One reason why some people claim that dairy products should not be eaten or drank is because they look at false studies that were supposedly done on dairy products. The problem with these studies, if they were done at all, is that they

do not differentiate between organic and non-organic dairy products. These studies are done with dairy products full of Pesticides, fertilizer chemicals, animal vaccines, antibiotics, low quality chemical filled feed, inadequate animal feed, and other causes are why there are so many ill effects that some people may suffer from chemical and toxin filled non-organic dairy products. If you have seen proof of a study that does compare organic with non-organic dairy products please let me know, I haven't seen one. It may exist but it is probably hard to find if so.

Even chemicals added after butter is made, for example, can make people sick. I have gotten sick before from “natural flavors” in butter, but I don't get sick if butter just has milk and salt as ingredients. Again, these studies do not differentiate between what chemicals are added to the dairy products that do not have to be there.

Again, I am not a doctor, but I am guessing that a person who has been diagnosed as being “lactose intolerant” could eat or drink organic dairy products that had no added chemicals or toxins. But perhaps they would need to try raw milk or cheese made from raw milk. If you have been diagnosed as being lactose intolerant, do not try to eat or drink any dairy products without learning from a professional first.

“Raw” milk or cheese in stores is no longer truly raw unless perhaps if bought from Amish people or a tiny farm. This is because the corrupt FDA does not allow the sale of raw milk or cheese, and they require milk to be heated to a certain temperature to be “pasteurized”. If you look at the label of a “raw” dairy product, you should see a note saying it was pasturized. This pasturization can kill some of the enzymes in the milk. This pasturization process could be one additional reason why some people get sick from dairy products. Do baby cows drink pasturized milk? Do breast fed human babies drink pasturized milk?

Chapter 7 Judging

7.1 Don't Judge me bro!

This is another wide-spread myth that even enters the hearts of non-Christians. It is a myth that offenders use to keep others from pointing out their wrong-doing. It is a myth that most Christians use to aid in the forgiving of offenders who have not yet asked to be forgiven by their victims, or have not admitted what they have done to their victims directly. It is the myth that silences any unwanted opposing viewpoint when the dominant person knows how to wield the myth. As far as I can remember, I have never once heard anyone debunk this myth, so I will now. What is the myth? Don't judge me bro!

7.2 What is the myth about?

The Judging myth is that we cannot 'judge' anyone. We cannot tell them when they are doing something wrong, even though the Bible describes situations where we should address the wrong-doing of others. We cannot talk about a bad person who does bad things because we are 'judging', even if we are trying to warn loved ones about this bad person. We cannot suggest to a loved one that they should drink or smoke less, because we are 'judging' (but conveniently many Christians don't mind nagging people who drink or smoke). Even when they are destroying their lives we cannot 'judge' them. This myth empowers offenders and disarms victims. It is not always the same from person to person, depending on what they believe about the myth, but overall, the myth has these general descriptions.

7.3 What is discernment?

Most people do not fully understand what the word discernment means, so they don't use it in their everyday vocabulary. Instead, they use the word judge, for almost every time they should actually be using the word discernment. Discernment is the act of looking at something and figuring out things about it. For example, looking at a person with a gun pointed at a bank teller, you might be trying to figure out if the guy is a robber or not. This is discernment. When a person tells you something completely opposite from what they told you in the past, and you then think about it to see if the person is lying to you, this is discernment. Most people severely lack good discernment, because they don't fully understand what it is, and why they need it. We should all ask God for true, accurate discernment. Most people do use a bit of discernment every day, but they do not usually recognize what they are doing. They might confuse it with some kind of 'gut feeling' that they are not even conscious about, or they might analyze a person and realize they are not trustworthy, and maybe even avoid that person, but in the end, they usually do not recognize the whole process of what happened.

7.4 What is Judging?

Real judging, is almost nothing like what most people think now. To accurately use of the word Judging, we should only use it for actual judges, who judge in courts, or for situations similar to that. That is what the word Judging means, is to look at a person and then choose a punishment or reward. If the judge were to just look at a person and their case, and then make no decision that affects the defendant's life, then the judge is just discerning and not Judging. True judging means the person not only has the power to set a reward or punishment over the defendant, it means the judge will be setting a punishment or reward over the defendant that affects their lives. That is the true, accurate usage of the word

'judging'. How many of us have the control over the lives of others like a judge has? Not many of us. There are some situations in our lives that are similar to a judge judging, like how parents will evaluate a child and decide what to do based on the child's actions, or a boss at a job having to do something about two employees who were fighting, and so forth.

7.5 Does the Bible tell us to not judge?

So, there is a big difference between judging, and discernment. Does the Bible tell us to not judge others? No. [Matthew 7:1](#) says 'Judge not, that ye be not judged.' Does this mean that we cannot ever judge? No. What it means is that we should be careful when we judge other people. But this is not talking about discernment, this is talking about the judging that an actual judge does. Did they have judges in Matthew's time? Of course they did, Jesus had to stand before Earthly judges. This verse is telling real judges that they should be careful how they Judge defendants, because in [verse 2](#) it says 'For with what judgment ye judge, ye shall be judged: and with what measure ye mete, it shall be measured to you again.' This means that God will judge those judges depending on how they judged defendants. This can also mean that parents, who have to act like judges sometimes with their children, also need to be careful, because the parents will be setting rewards or punishments that affect their children's lives. It can also mean a police officer who has to decide when to pull out their gun, or when to shoot, etc, because these actions affect the lives of others in the same way that a judges decisions would. Basically, anyone who has the control over others in a way that can give them a punishment or a reward, and has to choose one of them, they need to be careful. [Verse 3](#) says 'And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye?' This means that Judges, and people making control choices like judges, should not be hypocrites. In fact some saints will actually be judges, as [1 Corinthians 6:2](#) says 'Do ye not know that the

saints shall judge the world? and if the world shall be judged by you, are ye unworthy to judge the smallest matters?'

7.6 Does the Bible tell us to discern?

[Matthew 7:15-16](#) says 'Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves. Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of thorns, or figs of thistles?' Jesus does not want us to be hurt by evil people. Should we just blindly go about our lives and not care if we are putting ourselves or our loved ones in danger, because we expect God to send his angels and protect us no matter how risky we behave? Why would Jesus tell us to beware of false prophets and then tells us to discern them (look at their fruit), if he didn't mean it? God wants us to look at the actions of people, and see if their actions prove that they are a false profit, or a liar, a thief, etc. If we will know them by their fruits, do you think God wants us to only look for false profits? If we can know them by their fruits should we not also be careful of thieves, liars, and murderers? Should we allow our belongings and our loved ones to be in danger just because we think God is always going to bail us out with his miracles or angels? How many times have you already been fooled by liars and thieves? God sometimes expects us to discern and protect our own belongings and loved ones. God will sometimes send Angels to protect us also.

I do not fully understand God's ways in this, but I do know that we should not foolishly do things and just expect God to always bail us out from our foolish choices. For example, if you let a known thief come into your house alone, and God doesn't protect your stuff, is it God's fault or yours? Or if you believe a known liar that they are going to pay back a loan to you, should you loan them your rent money and be mad at God if God does not send you extra money to pay the rent that month? I suggest that you read all of [Matthew chapter 7](#). [Hebrews 5:14](#) says 'But strong meat belongeth to them that are of full age, *even* those who by reason of use have their senses

exercised to discern both good and evil.'

7.7 What is the difference?

You might think that it doesn't matter how you define words, as long as you understand things properly. Normally I would agree, but with this myth, almost nobody separates Judging from Discernment properly now in this modern world. We need to know the difference so that we are not confused. If we are confused, the devil can play tricks on us. I came across this website below, while I was searching for verses for this topic. I was surprised that the author understand some of this myth, but they still did not separate Judging from Discernment. Anyway, it is still a helpful read.

<http://biblereasons.com/judging-others/>

7.8 Have We Been Disarmed?

What easier way is there for a criminal or a bad person to take advantage of a victim, than by causing them to believe that they should not discriminate, evaluate, or even talk about what the bad person did to the victim? This myth has even gone to the point in modern society where if people express a grievance that concerns a person of a certain race, religion, or gender, then the victim who expresses the grievance is often shunned, bullied, called a racist, a sexist, an anti-Semite, or worse. This society construct allows even more offenders to get away with even more wrong doing, and the process snowballs out of control.

7.9 What Should We Do?

The Bible has many verses explaining when and what to do if a person does certain things wrong to us or our belongings. I encourage you to read the Bible completely, even

the Old Testament, because many of these situations are in the Old Testament. For example, why would the Bible tell us that if a person has an ox who hurts or kills somebody, that the owner of the ox has to do certain things to make the situation right, or suffer consequences? If the victim of the ox attack was just supposed to stay silent and not 'judge', then how was the owner of the ox or the leaders of the town even supposed to find out about it? If the victim was just expected to stay quiet then why does the Bible list out instructions on how to remedy situations like these? Even the New Testament tells us what to do if a brother offends us, or other situations where people might hurt us. Can we forgive but also require a payment for damages that were done? I believe that it is ok for us to do so in some situations. This will be addressed in the next chapter of this book.

Chapter 8 Self-Defense

8.1 Eye for an Eye

In [Matthew 5:38-42](#) there are verses that many myths depend on. Verses 38-39 say 'Ye have heard that it hath been said, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth: But I say unto you, That ye resist not evil: but whosoever shall smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also.' The other three verses tell what we should do if we are sued, asked to go a mile, or if somebody wants something from us. Do these verses then mean that we can never defend ourselves? These verses refer back to [Exodus 21:22-25](#) in the Old Testament. [Verse 22](#) says 'If men strive, and hurt a woman with child, so that her fruit depart *from her*, and yet no mischief follow: he shall be surely punished, according as the woman's husband will lay upon him; and he shall pay as the judges *determine*.' This part seems to be a situation where one of the men accidentally hurt the woman and baby in the womb, so it may not apply to the idea of “turning the other cheek”. [Verse 23-25](#) says 'And if *any* mischief follow, then thou shalt give life for life, Eye for eye, tooth for tooth, hand for hand, foot for foot, Burning for burning, wound for wound, stripe for stripe.' This part seems to say that if further, possibly intentional trouble happens, then a punishment should be dealt upon the offender based on what damage he did to a person. So the part in [Matthew 5:39](#) that says ' That ye resist not evil' might be referring to if a person wants to strive against us but there is no threat of harm against our family and we ourselves are not at risk of permanent damage, then we should “turn the other cheek”. This is because the next verses Jesus talks about are not threats of physical harm, so on this basis of context, verse 39 is also probably not a situation where there is risk of permanent physical harm.

Now, the important part is that the things listed in Exodus do not sound life threatening or as severe as a rape

attempt, and so forth. By this context I would say that for minor things it seems we should turn the other cheek unless God says otherwise in a specific situation. But what about more severe things like if somebody tries to rape or kill us or our family? Are we supposed to just let them do it and love them? Based on Exodus not listing severe things like rape and murder, I would say that we should defend our families from severe things like rape and murder. Also with [Exodus 21:23-25](#) talking about penalties for if further mischief happens, it should be clear to us that we are allowed or maybe even expected to defend ourselves and our family from physical harm. I am not suggesting that we should fight back against police that are trying to make an arrest, but surely if a criminal or bad person tries to hurt us or our family I believe we should defend them or ourselves. Let's look at what God and Jesus think about the use of weapons:

8.2 What is this about swords in the NT?

There are at least a few examples in the Old testament where when women got raped, their brothers killed the rapist. I believe the main reason why God destroyed Sodom and Gomorah was because they were rapists, and it had less to do with their sexual preferences. In [Luke 22:36](#) Jesus said 'Then said he unto them, But now, he that hath a purse, let him take *it*, and likewise *his* scrip: and he that hath no sword, let him sell his garment, and buy one.' It was important enough to Jesus that his disciples had swords, that he told them to sell his garment that he was probably even using, in order to buy a sword. Do you think that Jesus just wanted his disciples decorated like some kind of British palace guard where they just stand there to be seen in military garb? Do you think Jesus is so superficial that he would have them even sell a garment to buy a sword if the sword was just for decoration? Obviously Jesus felt that there was a real need for them to have a sword

on them, perhaps for when the guards came to get Jesus, or afterward for their own defense. In [John 18:10-11](#) says 'Then Simon Peter having a sword drew it, and smote the high priest's servant, and cut off his right ear. The servant's name was Malchus. Then said Jesus unto Peter, Put up thy sword into the sheath: the cup which my Father hath given me, shall I not drink it?' This was near the end of Jesus' time with his disciples, if Jesus did not want them to have any weapons, he would have made them sell or destroy them. Jesus didn't tell him to get rid of the sword, he didn't even punish him for drawing it. Clearly in this case Jesus wanted to let the guards take him. Perhaps Jesus wanted them to have swords so that the guards would not try to kill them or take them as prisoners. If swords were so bad, why did Jesus allow Peter to have one? Now, this leads us to the next question:

8.3 What about guns?

There is not much difference between guns and swords. Both are weapons, and both cannot hurt anyone by themselves. They are inanimate objects that by themselves are not good or evil. They cannot hurt anyone just by being undisturbed in a cabinet or even in a holster. It takes purposeful use to use one of these tools, in order to cause harm. When a sword or gun is used to hurt somebody, is it the gun's fault or the sword's fault? No, they are inanimate objects. If there is any fault it is the fault of the person who used the sword or gun. However, in the United States, the next most important amendment just after freedom of religion and speech, is the protection of the God given right to have weapons, in the 2nd amendment. The United States constitution supersedes state, county, and city laws. States, counties, and cities cannot legally contradict the United States Constitution. I believe we should be very careful about when we use any weapon. I believe they should only be used for rare situations like protecting our homes from people breaking in while we are home, or if somebody is trying to kill or rape a family member, and things with the same severity like

112

those things.

Chapter 9 Artifacts and Locations

9.1 The Grail

Because of the hype and glorification of the 'holy' grail in movies, books and even the news, most people think that the grail has some kind of importance. They would rather listen to what their television has to tell them about the grail, than to look in the Bible to see if it even matters. There are no verses that mentions the grail, and there are no verses that say that any cup or grail was saved or set aside for any importance. This myth might come from [Matthew 20:20-23](#) where Jesus tells the mother of the sons of Zebedee 'And he saith unto them, Ye shall drink indeed of my cup, and be baptized with the baptism that I am baptized with: but to sit on my right hand, and on my left, is not mine to give, but *it shall be given to them* for whom it is prepared of my Father.' in [verse 23](#). Do you really think this cup he mentions has any importance in being a child of God now, if the cup is even a real cup? This verse could easily be talking about the cup symbolically as in it being a ministry, or even a portion of his inheritance. [Psalm 11:6](#) and [16:5](#) talk about the cup being like a portion that we receive from God. [Psalm 23:5](#) says 'Thou preparest a table before me in the presence of mine enemies: thou anointest my head with oil; my cup runneth over.' This could mean in a literal sense that he has adequate food and drink, but it is most likely symbolic where the cup is like a spirit receiving blessing or God's presence, or it could have both meanings. However, the cup is not the important thing in this verse, the important thing in this verse is the providence of God.

[Psalm 116:13](#) says 'I will take the cup of salvation, and call upon the name of the LORD.' Do you think a literal cup is needed for salvation because of this verse? Do you think God would really require us to go find a cup somewhere, which nobody really knows where it is or if it exists? If there was a cup that was so important, why would it still be hidden? How

many cups did Jesus ever drink from? Is every single cup he ever drank from supposed to be a 'holy relic'? And if the Grail myth is true, then what happens if an evil person controls it and then only evil people can drink from it? Do you think that is how God would arrange things in this world? Instead of seeking Jesus himself, who is still alive today, many people consider seeking the grail, which may not even exist anymore, or may be hidden away still.

9.2 The Shroud

This is another artifact myth that has been popularized by television shows, news, and the internet. Just like the grail myth, there is no verse that says we need to find the burial shroud of Jesus, or that it would even do anything for us, yet many people watch these shows and think about where the shroud is. They will listen to 'teachers' who talk about this for an hour or more at their church, and then donate money to the 'teacher', all for this vanity, because they don't want to take the time to study and understand the Bible for themselves.

Again, even if this myth is true about the Shroud of Turin, what if an evil person controls it? Then only evil people will get to see and touch it, or those evil people will charge fees to let people see it. Do you think this is how God wants to give us blessings, by forcing us to find these supposed artifacts? Even if the shroud myth is real, and a 'good' person finds it and owns it, are you going to spend thousands of dollars to fly where it is to touch it to get healed, or would you rather spend no money and just seek Jesus himself? The only mentions of the burial cloths used for Jesus were very brief, and the verses did not seem to give any importance whatsoever to the cloths.

If the 'Shroud' was so important that we needed to know more about it, it would be in the Bible. If it was a miracle making artifact, then God would have put testimony in the Bible about people being healed who touched it. But we don't have any verses in the Bible about any miracles happening related to the 'shroud' cloths. In the 9th month of the Gregorian

2019 (Sept.), I found this YouTube video below stating that carbon dating of the linen of this 'Shroud' was done by three labs and they all concluded that it was made from 1260-1390 AD. Carbon dating is not completely accurate, the more recent an object is, the more accurate the results are. Even if this dating is not very accurate, the margin of error is not enough to make it wrong by 1300 years. The video below shows many evidences of this 'Shroud of Turin' being a forgery. I believe that this video is correct with the theory that Da Vinci made the shroud with a Camera Obscura, a device he wrote about, and then 'painted' real human blood on the shroud afterward. Three different models were probably used to make the head, front, and back of the image. It should be clear to us that it is a fake, but if we cannot see that, we should at least see that this supposed 'relic' is not part of the Biblical faith. Jesus never told us to do anything with it, or to seek it out, or to interact with it in any way, or that it would even exist.

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=GwE7XvOi4pc> (Did Leonardo Da Vinci create-Shroud-Turin)

9.3 Real artifacts and locations

Many ignorant people and con artists have set up shop around the middle east with fake locations of the burial tomb, mount Sinai, the location of the ark, and so forth. All of these well known locations are fraudulent. If you want to know the real locations of these places and artifacts, then you should search for video's made by Ron Wyatt and his wife or his sons. Ron has found the real ark of the covenant, Noah's ark, Sinai, Jesus tomb, the cross, the Red sea crossing, and more. But again, we can seek Jesus and God directly, we do not have to go to these places to find God and Jesus. Perhaps God will ask a few people to go to these locations, but for most of us, we don't need to go.

<https://www.ronwyatt.com/>

9.4 The Garden of Eden

There are many books, movies, documentaries, and other media that people have peddled where they try to find the garden of Eden. To start off with, if people believe the Bible, then they will understand that the land on the Earth changed drastically during the global flood ([Genesis chapters 6 and 7](#)). Eden simply is not the same as it used to be, and is now most likely buried under mud and rocks, or in some unknown underground cave. Even further, God had Cherubims guard Eden with a flaming sword ([Genesis 3:24](#)). So even if Eden was found, people could not enter it without God's permission. Yet many people want to pretend that the Bible is not literal, or that they can still find Eden or enter it. Simply reading the Bible and believing God can help us to avoid deceptions. How much time do people waste researching this and watching videos about it, hoping to find where Eden?

9.5 The 3rd Temple

There are many people who are looking forward to a third Temple being built in Jerusalem. The problem is, we no longer need a Temple. We can be forgiven because Jesus died for us so we would not have to, and he was resurrected. God knows that we cannot, or cannot easily travel to Jerusalem even if there was a third Temple. I believe that God has guidelines on how we should meet when we cannot, or reasonably cannot get to Jerusalem (if there was a Temple).

Worse yet, this third Temple (if it gets built, which I believe it will), will not be ran by “holy” people, and the priesthood will not be conducted like the Old Testament describes. I believe the beast will cause it to be made for the main reason of the beast to enter it and pretend that he is God. Unfortunately there are probably many Christians, Jews, and even Muslims who will fall for this deception from the beast and the false prophet.

I believe there will be a Temple in the millennium (after

Jesus comes back), in Jerusalem, but we will not need to make animal sacrifices, just like we do not need to now, because Jesus was the last sacrifice that fulfilled that system of animal sacrifice. Those animal sacrifices symbolically pointed towards Jesus dying for us.

9.6 Revealing of the Ark of the Covenant

Ron Wyatt says he saw the real Ark of the Covenant, and that it will be revealed to us. By what he describes, it seems that we will be able to see it on video.

Be carefull though, I also believe that there will be a fake ark that satan will pretend is real, and he will probably pretend it has new revelations about the Bible. Those “revelations” will contradict the Bible. This is because the real Ark will not contradict the Bible, but will confirm the Bible.
<https://www.arkdiscovery.com/ark-cov-index.htm>

Chapter 10 Shepherds

10.1 Will you shut up and agree?

It is usually an unsaid rule that nobody should interrupt a pastor while they are preaching, and I would usually agree, unless if there is some crazy thing where the pastor says that Jesus is not the son of God, or that there are other ways to be saved than by Jesus. I might not interrupt them if I were in their church, but I would definitely make a grumbling and leave. Anyway, I don't even think it is a good idea to have an expensive church where rent or a mortgage has to be paid, along with all of the utilities each month, and then to top it off all of the staff who get a paycheck. When these churches teach contrary to the Bible, it is best just to leave the church in my opinion, unless if God wants you there for some special reason. There probably are exceptions where God does want an actual church building for people, where there are bills that have to be paid, but for the most part it is my belief that God would prefer that we go to home groups or to parks, or places where there is no extra cost, or only a trivial cost. This might mean that the groups might be smaller, but that is probably even better, since there would be more accountability overall.

Anyway, every christian denomination has their pet doctrines that contradict the Bible or add to it or take away from it. Even non-denominational churches have non-Biblical doctrines. Am I saying that you should leave them? Not if God really does want you there. Should you tithe to the expensive churches? No, unless if God wants you to. Your money would be better off going to the homeless, orphans, or widows, where you can see the money actually being used for them, instead of paying the bills and paychecks of a church.

Do you think that the first Christian churches in the Bible were expensive buildings where preachers and deacons got a paycheck also? I don't think so. Now I am not saying that

preachers should work for free, because even the Levites in the Old Testament were given things and had places provided for them to live in, but when preachers rant and rave that you need to tithe, usually it is because their paycheck is not as big as they want in my opinion, or the church bills are not getting paid. Anyway, if you want to become a member of most churches now, you need to agree with the pastor and the denomination. If you disagree with them, it has to be on issues that the pastor thinks is unimportant. Most pastors are not going to want a flock full of people who actively show the pastor that he is wrong by showing them verses in the Bible. Again, that might not even be worth trying, it might be best just to leave the church if you disagree with the pastor. If you want to become a member, you will have to agree to their list of beliefs, or at least pretend to agree (is that right to do?).

There were probably some Christian Jews in Israel and other places who met in synagogues during the time that Jesus was here in the flesh, and even afterward. There are plenty of reasons why synagogues were a good thing back then, mainly for the keeping and preserving of Hebrew Bible scrolls. Only rich people or synagogues could afford to pay a scribe to copy a Hebrew Bible scroll, which could take them a year to copy, not counting the hide, ink, and food costs for the scribe.

But for certain, since the 1611 when we had the best English translation of the Bible, the [King James Version](#), almost anyone who wants a copy of the [KJV](#) in the western nations can get a copy eventually. There is not really a need anymore for a building to preserve books for us, because the average household has the means of keeping books dry enough, clean, away from direct sunlight (which can degrade things), etc.

10.2 What is NLP?

First, Let's start by saying what Neuro-Linguistic Programming (NLP) is not. NLP is not a self-help technique, and it is not a positive thinking technique. It is not meant to improve ones-self. NLP is used to control and to manipulate other people, without them knowing it. These include less

serious things like using humor in lectures, and constantly moving around and constantly giving eye contact to as many people in the audience as you can. If this was all that NLP was about, I wouldn't even write about it, but these lesser things are used to reinforce the control techniques.

The more sinister techniques begin with choosing every word in the lecture carefully. These words are chosen to compliment the overall topic that is being indoctrinated into the audience. Yes, indoctrination and propaganda teachings often use NLP. NLP practitioners often will use words that cause fear in an audience, along with topics that cause fear, in order to sound like they are offering a solution, and so you need to listen to them. It is a proven science that people are more easily manipulated if they are in a state of fear. If the topic permits, and if the NLP practitioners are good at conducting humor, then they will sometimes use humor to get you out of your analytical mind-set, and into a mindset that is more willing to agree with the funny person you now like (Because they are funny).

NLP practitioners usually don't care about the truth, they just want you to believe what they are teaching. They might even know what they are teaching is a lie, and they probably don't even care. Most colleges teach NLP, but usually not in a straight, factual way. They make the student learn one piece of NLP at a time, and sugar coat each piece, so that the student might not even be aware that they are going to be controlling and manipulating the people that listen to their future lectures. Sometimes Colleges might call NLP something else that sounds more benevolent. NLP practitioners are usually very skilled public speakers, with vast vocabulary that they purposely use to impress others, but they almost always lack the anointing of God.

There are a few ways to detect a NLP practitioner, without having to make a list of their methods. One way is if you are able to feel or discern if the anointing of God is moving through them. This is usually obvious to people who are able to sense it, but not always. Somebody who is teaching or preaching under the anointing of God is probably not going

to utilize NLP methods. Secondly, people who have good discernment can often detect the manipulation and control that the NLP practitioner is using, especially if the discerning person knows a bit about NLP. It might take a few minutes, but the NLP practitioner will usually show signs, just like a snake will eventually show its teeth or rattle its tail. Of course there is an obvious third way, where God directly tells you that the person is using manipulative methods to control and convince the audience.

Some forms of fear used by preachers or teachers are the fear of hell, fear of curses or punishment for not doing what they want (tithing, forgiving, etc), or fear of missing the 'rapture', etc.

Many NLP practitioners will not even use Bible verses to prove what they are saying. Of course teachers should not always have to list verses every time they speak. When NLP practitioners do show you a verse in the Bible, they usually twist its meaning, take it out of context, or find a new age Bible version that best fits their deception. Sometimes NLP practitioners will even tell the truth for most of a lecture, and even show verses correctly, just to hit you with their big lie once your guard is down. They might not even realize it is a lie, but they themselves are brain-washed into the untrue doctrine.

Of course, there are some good pastors out there, even in the mega-churches, who do not practice NLP. I am not saying that all pastors use NLP. The internet is full of people who say NLP is a good thing and can be used for good purposes, many say that NLP is not harmful or dangerous. If you want to find specific examples of NLP being used, or how to detect specific usages of NLP, you can look online, but be very careful about any website that pretends that NLP is good or no big deal. After all, if a person is trying to deceive and or control you, would they admit to you that they are doing something bad to you? Would the colleges that teach NLP admit that NLP is harmful? No. Of course, not everyone who gets a degree from a college will end up practicing NLP, and not everyone who teaches and is trying to convince people of

things practices NLP. We should all look at the methods that Jesus used to teach, so that we can improve how we teach, and do so without trying to manipulate others.

10.3 Papers Please!

Another potential problem about pastors and leaders of churches that I already hinted at, is that almost all of them have one or more college degrees, because most churches prefer that the pastor has a degree. Most churches prefer that their pastors have a degree, because most people incorrectly assume that if a person has a degree they are smart or have learned important things relating to the job they are applying for. All that a degree proves now is that a person can memorize key words from lectures and text books, most of which they will later forget.

College degrees used to mean something, when colleges actually taught true and useful things, and let the students give their opinions. Now, most colleges do not allow students to give their opinions when they turn in assignments, but instead, the students usually must regurgitate the talking points and key words that their professor tells them.

Another problem with degrees is that, sure there is some inflation that increases tuition costs, but most of the annual increases in tuition prices are purely from college corporation greed. Because students almost always have to get a loan or financial aid, students do not truly see the horrific impact of the debt they are incurring until after they start getting bills in the mail. So the cost of the tuition does not matter much to most students, and instead the student looks at what kind of prestige the school will put on their resume. In the cases where the students get financial aid, the students care even less about how much the tuition costs. The corporations that own the colleges don't care how they get paid really, and they will get paid, either by tax payer paid financial aid, or by selling the debt to debt collectors, or collecting it themselves. At least in the USA right now, college loans cannot be bankrupted. Students will be liable for the debt until they pay it off, or until they die. If they

cannot pay, their wages, assets, tax returns, and other valuables might be ceased to pay off the debt. This all means that the college corporations have no care at all when they increase the costs of tuition. As long as people are still signing onto loan debts and getting aid, the corporations will continue to increase the prices of tuition.

(All financial estimates I made in the following paragraphs of this section were made before Bidenomics cost of living changes hit the USA) Students will continue to get degrees as long as there is either a demand for jobs in the field they are studying, or as long as the corporations can trick the students into thinking there is a demand in their field of study. You might be wondering why I am ranting about colleges? This is one of the main costs of a church, paying the pastor. I took a look at a few websites, and the first link below says that the average yearly salary for pastors is almost \$50,000. This was the lowest estimate I found, so I will use this low estimate for my calculations. This is about \$4,000 per month that the average church has to pay a pastor. The website in the second link below says the average American's income is a bit above \$50,000 per year. This would be a high estimate to use for church income estimations, because the average person in a small town would probably be making much less. However, according to the same website, in the third link below, the average person on social security gets about \$16,000 per year.

It seems that all of the churches I have gone to in my life, which are many, at least half of the regular attendants are around the age of retirement. So, I think it would be reasonable to adjust the estimate for the average church attendants income to something in-between \$50,000 and \$16,000. \$30,000 seems like a more reasonable, but probably still a high end estimate. Most churches preach that a tithe should be 10% of a person's income, so this means by my estimate, the average church member who tithes to their church, tithes about \$3,000 per year. Of course some of these people would pay less and some would pay more than the average tithe, but this should be a decent estimate still. This means it would take about 17 of these average tithing members, just to pay for the pastors

wages each year. I haven't even estimated the church costs for rent / mortgage, utilities, ministries, etc. If we guess that the average rent is \$1000, the average utilities \$400, and other things at a low \$200 per month, that adds up to \$19,200 per year, which would need another 6 or 7 people to tithe all year for. So, in this low end estimate, it would take about 24 actively tithing members to cause an average church just to break even each year. Mega-churches of course would have much bigger expenses, and tiny churches who own their own land or have a volunteer pastor would have less expenses, but this should be a decent estimate.

What if all of the 24 tithing members of a small church decided to start going to local home groups or meet in parks? What if they then decided to give their tithes to local homeless shelters, or food banks, or other real, non-corrupted charities? Considering that these people might use some of their tithe to help the home groups, or to pay for things while meeting at the parks, they would probably still have about \$60,000 left over by the end of the year that they could give to real, caring charities. Again, I am not saying that it is a sin for you to go to a church building, or that it is a sin for a church building to exist. I am just showing a potential problem with how things are done in this country.

Another reason why students who graduate that are looking to be pastors need a big income, is because of the debt they now have that cannot be bankrupted. In the fourth link below, that website shows that the average monthly college loan payment is more than \$300 per month. Given that the average car payment is probably around \$300, the average car insurance \$100, and the average rent at \$1000, food would be at least \$300, utilities \$300, entertainment \$200, gas \$150, health insurance \$200, and I am probably missing things so \$200 for other things. That adds up to \$3000 and that is just for one person, not for a family. That is \$36,000 per year in just expenses that a potential pastor is facing. After paying taxes for their \$50,000, the pastor would be lucky to have \$35,000 left to spend each year. So, the result is that churches either pay the average wages to pastors, or the churches hire people without

degrees, to save some money. But most churches will not do that due to their own biases and the requirements of their denomination who bails them out each month if they cannot pay for all of their monthly expenses. This means each denominational church is going to follow every rule made by the denomination. The new pastor, is going to obey every doctrine that the denomination has, usually even if it contradicts the Bible, because the pastor might not be able to get another position easily. So even if the pastor disagrees with many of their denominations doctrines, they feel stuck there until something 'better' comes along.

Anyway, I doubt that this modern day church model is what Jesus had in mind when he sent out the apostles, and I doubt it is how the New Testament 'churches' operated while the apostles were alive. Again, I am not saying it is a sin for a pastor to be paid, but I think that the whole concept of church buildings is not a good way to go.

<https://www.payscale.com/research/US/Job=Pastor/Salary>

<https://www.fool.com/investing/2017/03/24/whats-the-average-income-in-the-united-states.aspx>

<https://www.fool.com/investing/general/2016/01/31/how-big-is-the-average-social-security-check.aspx>

<https://studentloanhero.com/student-loan-debt-statistics/>

10.4 Obey who?

Unlike what the popular myth that is being taught, I believe that [Romans 13:1-7](#) is talking about christian groups of people, or 'churches', and not civil governments. In [verse 1](#) it says 'Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God: the powers that be are ordained of God.' I believe this verse is talking about local leaders of home groups or small 'flocks' of christians, like what they would have had when the apostles were still alive. I do not believe that this verse is talking about every christian denomination paster, because some of them are evil or immoral people. And while God has the control to remove them from

office, it does not mean that just because that wicked pastor is still in office, that we should obey everything they say. If it comes down to it, just leave that church and find a group that does not cause you distress. I believe this verse is saying that if God put you into a group, and wants you to stay in that group, then you need to be subject under that flocks leader or pastor. So this all hinges on who God wants you to gather together with. [Verse 2](#) says 'Whosoever therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God: and they that resist shall receive to themselves damnation.' These are the kind of verses that corrupt denominations would use in order to abuse their members while trying to brain wash them into thinking everything is ok. I believe this verse is just talking about that pastor that God placed you under. If you are attending a church with an abusive pastor, then leave that church or ask God to help you get out. [Verse 3](#) says 'For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to the evil. Wilt thou then not be afraid of the power? do that which is good, and thou shalt have praise of the same!' Again, I believe this is talking about the pastor that is obeying God, whom you may have been put under. I see this verse as saying that a good pastor is fighting evil, so you should acknowledge their position and what they are doing, and do good also yourself. [Verse 4](#) says 'For he is the minister of God to thee for good. But if thou do that which is evil, be afraid; for he beareth not the sword in vain: for he is the minister of God, a revenger to *execute* wrath upon him that doeth evil.' This is actually good news to good people, it says to me that if you are under a good pastor, he can and will under God's direction direct wrath upon evil people. [Verse 5-6](#) says 'Wherefore *ye* must needs be subject, not only for wrath, but also for conscience sake. For for this cause pay ye tribute also: for they are God's ministers, attending continually upon this very thing.' This verse does imply that Good Shepherds and ministers should get paid for their work. But again, the question remains, who does God want you to gather with? Does he want you to tithe to a church that has lots of expenses, or to a small group of people where the money will actually go towards helping needy people? [Verse 7](#) says 'Render therefore

to all their dues: tribute to whom tribute *is due*; custom to whom custom; fear to whom fear; honour to whom honour.'

This reminds me of when Jesus told Peter to pay their taxes. In [Matthew 17:24-27](#) is the full part, but the main verse I want to show here is what Jesus said to Peter about paying the tribute money that that tribute collector was wanting to collect from them. In [verse 27](#), and at the end of that chapter, Jesus said to Peter 'Notwithstanding, lest we should offend them, go thou to the sea, and cast an hook, and take up the fish that first cometh up; and when thou hast opened his mouth, thou shalt find a piece of money: that take, and give unto them for me and thee.' This tells me that Jesus was not willing to debate with the tribute collector about whether or not they were required to pay tribute, but instead just wanted to pay it anyway, to avoid problems. Just like now there are people in the USA who say they are not legally required to pay taxes to the IRS, but that does not prevent the IRS from getting people put in jail or their assets taken. So whether or not we are lawfully required to pay taxes, it seems to me that Jesus would probably tell us to pay the taxes, in order to avoid all of the trouble it would cause if we did not pay. Just think that if a person thought they could go to court against the IRS and win, it would take many years in the courts, and probably tens of thousands of dollars in attorney fees, even if the person won. Even if they somehow won in a way that they owed nothing to their attorney or the courts, they still lost several years fighting it in the courts. They could have just paid the taxes and used the rest of those years to start a new ministry that helped people. This is what I see when I read [Matthew 17:27](#).

10.5 Separation of Church and State

There is a myth so popular and overreaching that almost everyone either believes it is true, or they subconsciously obey the myth regardless, due to it's widespread roots in society. This is the myth that religion has no place in government, or even public places. This myth was a design that was hatched by

satan's servants even while the ink was still drying on the freshly written constitution of the United States of America. Ever since that plan that satan made, prayers, the name of Jesus and the word God, Bible verses or references, and other Christian things, have been slowly removed from government institutions and public places. When the United States was formed, prayers and Bible references in government and public places were common. Now they are almost non-existent, until Trump became president that is. It got to the point where people would get punished or fired in government offices or in their workplaces for praying while at their offices or on their jobs. People were led to believe that government and religion could not interfere with each other, but in complete hypocrisy the many government institutions regulated, controlled, and even dictated what religions could and could not do, even what they could and could not say in their own churches. Pastors were given threats that if they talked about certain political issues in their churches to their congregations, that they might lose certain governmental benefits or statuses. Pastors were encouraged to promote certain political candidates and issues while ignoring other candidates and issues. People high in the United States governmental entities wanted their agendas and propogandas pushed onto the church goers, while keeping them from discussing solutions to real issues that the church goers were facing in their lives.

Although things in the United States have not yet gotten as bad as how Christians in China and other countries are being treated, it was almost getting to that point. For example, I have heard from different books and testimonies, that in China, only state approved churches are allowed, and only state approved sermons and topics are allowed. It was (probably still is) illegal to have a home group meeting that discusses the Bible or includes gatherings for Prayer and so on. Christians in China were and probably still are being beaten, killed, fined, and imprisoned, for meeting in private places, just to have small church type groups. Until Trump got into office, this is the same exact direction the United States was going into. We would have been under the same persecution. If a globalist

president replaces trump, then we will once again be going into the directions of state controlled and censored religion (Under the Biden regime now in 2023 it seems so).

If you really read the constitution of the United States of America, you might be surprised to see the word 'God' in it. Then the very first amendment says 'Congress shall make no law respecting an establishment of religion, or prohibiting the free exercise thereof; or abridging the freedom of speech, or of the press, or the right of the people peaceably to assemble, and to petition the Government for a redress of grievances.' This means that the United States congress cannot allow any law that regulates or controls a religion in any way. The original idea of 'separation of church and state' was to keep the government's nose out of our religions. It was not meant to keep prayer or mentions of the Bible out of government buildings, courts, or public places. It was never meant to threaten churches to be silent about political issues.

It was getting to the point in the USA where denomination leaders were giving talking points and service themes to their pastors that came directly from local and federal governmental agencies, and even global agencies. For example, on the memorial day of 9/11 each year, some churches are given specific themes to help their members 'cope' with anxiety about terrorism. On the surface that might not seem harmful, but the Bible tells us to fear nothing, and only revere God. If we really follow the Bible, we don't need a special pep talk on the memorial of a tragic event that could have easily been prevented. Most of the time, these agencies that pressure denominations to have key talking points about tragic events, also promote social controls over people in order to control their very thoughts, to the point that the thoughts of the average person are 'acceptable' to these agencies.

Let us not forget why many Christians came to America originally, and that was to escape the religious persecutions that were going on in Europe. That is why the very first amendment mentions freedom of religion. There is a link below to a free online PDF version of the United States Constitution below:
<https://constitutioncenter.org/media/files/constitution.pdf>

10.6 Can women lead men?

1 [Timothy 2:9-15](#) shows us that women should not teach or usurp authority over a man, but learn silence because women are more easily deceived as Eve was deceived. Not only that, but Eve also usurped the authority of Adam because she disobeyed God and then convinced Adam to eat of the fruit also. She either led him in that act or he consented to her idea, and he knowingly disobeyed God in order to go along with her in her sin.

It seems there are other places in the Bible that allow women to prophesy, so it seems that it is ok for women to prophesy in a church type gathering, but it is my opinion that they should probably first say they have a word or prophesy to say and then ask to permission to say it. I believe that once the woman says what God wants them to say, they should stop speaking, and not give their opinions or interpretations, because, that could be seen as teaching.

Communist and Propaganda agencies know that if they can convince women of a doctrine or belief, and get those women into teaching positions, they will convince men and women of that belief. Essentially, women are easier to convince of things compared to men, on average.

People might say that back two thousand years ago it was just a cultural reason, but the reason listed in the verses above was because Eve was deceived, it wasn't a cultural reason.

I believe that it is acceptable for women to teach children, because of course they would need to and women in general are probably better at teaching many things to children, but I believe they should not teach or lead adult men.

What about Deborah though ([Judges chapter 4](#))? She was the only example I know of in the Bible where a woman ever lead men, and even so, Barak was the one called to lead the army but he wouldn't go to battle unless she went with him. Because it was a very wicked time in Israel, maybe they were going through a phase of feminism like we have been in the USA, and she was the only obedient person to lead Israel.

Maybe that was why Barak was so weak minded. Maybe there were other phases of feminism in Israel like with [Isaiah 3:12](#) which says children oppressed them and women ruled them, to cause them err and destroy their paths. In [1 Peter 3:7](#) women are called the “weaker vessel”. It seems that the only leading that Deborah was supposed to do was the judgments that a Judge does. She was also a Prophetess.

<https://thetransformedwife.com/does-deborah-give-women-the-right-to-lead/>

Chapter 11 Marriage

11.1 Does the Bible say we need government permission to get married?

Does the Bible say anywhere that we need to get the permission of the government to get married? No. Almost every Christian believes that God will not accept a marriage unless the government gives a piece of paper saying it is a legal marriage, but this is not true. Nowhere in the bible does it say we need a certificate of marriage, or any form of paper from the government. There are verses that people use to say that we do need government permission, and one of them is [Jeremiah 3:8](#) which says 'And I saw, when for all the causes whereby backsliding Israel committed adultery I had put her away, and given her a bill of divorce; yet her treacherous sister Judah feared not, but went and played the harlot also.' This does not prove however that any form of government permission is needed, or even that any certificate of marriage is needed. To assume so is to severely stretch this verse and makes big assumptions. The only thing this verse might prove, is that God wants a writ or bill of divorce given to a woman if a man divorces her. Moses confirms this also in [Deuteronomy 24:1-2](#) which says 'When a man hath taken a wife, and married her, and it come to pass that she find no favour in his eyes, because he hath found some uncleanness in her: then let him write her a bill of divorcement, and give *it* in her hand, and send her out of his house. And when she is departed out of his house, she may go and be another man's *wife*.'

In [Mark 10:4-5](#) the Pharisees asked Jesus 'And they said, Moses suffered to write a bill of divorcement, and to put *her* away. And Jesus answered and said unto them, For the hardness of your heart he wrote you this precept.' So Jesus confirms about the bill of divorce, but Jesus says nothing about us having to get a certificate from anyone if we get married.

Jesus explains some things about men and women becoming one flesh, and then in [verse 9](#) he says 'What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put asunder.' So did Jesus just tell them that the Old Testament law was done away with? No, It is clear to me that Jesus is saying that he would prefer that nobody gets divorced, but because of the hardness of our hearts, he allowed us to get divorced. In the last part of the verse 'let not man put asunder.' I take this as saying that nobody else should try to separate them, and even the married couple should try to avoid divorce, but if they really want to he did provide a way out. The word 'let' is the key word here. To me it means something that should not be done, but he allowed a way out. So, we do not need a certificate or government permission to get married. All we need is God's permission, and you can do that by asking him what he wants you to do.

In the USA, it is not illegal for a man and woman to live together as if they were married, even if they do not have a government marriage certificate. So in the eyes of the government and ignorant people you might look like just 'boyfriend and girlfriend', but if you ask God for permission and he says yes, then I believe that in God's eyes you are married, and that is all that matters.

I do think it is a good idea to have a ceremony with family and friends, and some kind of memorial paper written up for the occasion, maybe even having it notarized, but a government certificate is not needed. Not only is it not needed, you will then have to bear all the high cost of getting a divorce in the courts if you get a divorce. You can even write a private contract about what happens if you separate with your spouse, even without a government marriage certificate. The only real possible benefit I can see for a couple getting a government marriage license is that you can then use that certificate when you file your taxes and then file jointly. If you do have a boyfriend or girlfriend, or somebody that you consider that you are married to, even without a government marriage certificate, if you break up with that person, you should give them a writ of divorce in my opinion, just to be sure that you are doing the right thing according to the Bible.

Divorce or separation should be a last resort, if one of you can no longer tolerate the cheating or abuse or sins that the other one is doing. That's one of the problems in modern times is that people don't want to give any effort anymore in relationships, they think they can just get a new relationship easily if there is a small problem, so they do not care how they treat the other person, and they do not care about the feelings of the other person.

One excuse some people might use to get a government marriage certificate is for the "protection" that is given by family courts during a divorce. For example, a woman might be given a house or alimony. The same sorts of protections could possibly be arranged with a privately written prenuptial agreement (contract), and then that might be able to help the couple to avoid any possible corruption or bias in a family court.

Because of feminism and other social engineering that the globalists have arranged in the USA, it is no longer a good idea for men to get a government marriage in the USA, in my opinion. This is because women often are believed no matter what, and some states allow "no fault" divorces. Many women lie, cheat, and do whatever they can to get the most alimony, child support payments, and assets (house and vehicles) from their soon to be ex-husband. The courts seem to usually side with women. Often times a woman with no income or a lower income, who never even helped pay the bills or house payment, will get half of the house or the entire house, sometimes even if she has no children. Many women know that when they get married, it is like an income insurance. They know the man will pay for bills and she will still get money after the divorce. Many women now try to get married before they become 30 years old, even if the guy is somebody they are not attracted to, or a guy they don't even really like. They often want the social status of being seen as being happily married, and they want the financial support to be able to buy the things they want and have the lifestyle they want. They might not be able to afford those things while being single. Even just while dating, many women still expect a man to buy dinner even in the age of

feminism where "men and women are equal" supposedly.

I do believe that men and women have equal value to God, but we are very different, and I believe God sees us differently because he knows he made us different.

11.2 Can a person get remarried after a divorce?

There is another popular myth among Christians where they believe that once a person gets married, they can never marry another person again if their spouse dies or if they get a divorce. Did you see in [Deuteronomy 24:2](#) how the woman that a man might divorce can then get remarried? In [Mark 11-12](#) Jesus tells his disciples 'And he saith unto them, Whosoever shall put away his wife, and marry another, committeth adultery against her. And if a woman shall put away her husband, and be married to another, she committeth adultery.' What is different about these verses then the ones earlier in this chapter? In these 2 verses, Jesus makes no mention of a bill or writ of divorce being written by the man or woman. I believe this is why they are guilty of adultery in these cases, because they did not give their spouse a writ of divorce. People miss the lack of a divorce writ being in the verse so they mistakingly make assumptions. Can we get divorced for a specific reason? Jesus says in [Matthew 19:9](#) 'And I say unto you, Whosoever shall put away his wife, except *it be* for fornication, and shall marry another, committeth adultery: and whoso marrieth her which is put away doth commit adultery.' So it seems clear that if a spouse is cheating on us with other people, we can rightfully divorce them. This is because the jealousy would most likely cause the marriage to fail anyway. Even God got jealous when Israel worshiped other idols or 'gods'. It is a similar situation.

[Deuteronomy 24:4](#) says 'Her former husband, which sent her away, may not take her again to be his wife, after that she is defiled; for that *is* abomination before the LORD: and

thou shalt not cause the land to sin, which the LORD thy God giveth thee *for* an inheritance.' This suggests that if a 'married' man and woman get divorced (or even just a privately written notice of separation) with a valid reason, then they should not remarry each other again later on in life once the woman is 'defiled' (this probably means if she finds a new husband but then gets divorced again, essentially meaning that she was with another man since the first man). This forbidding to remarry a 'defiled' former wife is probably due to the jealousy that it would cause because the man would know that the woman had been with another man.

11.3 When does a marriage start in God's eyes?

God says in [Genesis 2:24](#) 'Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh.' This verse implies that the couple that 'gets married' starts to live together and intends on being together the rest of their life. This verse also implies that the man and woman are 'sleeping together' in order to be 'one flesh' and so that they can have children if they want to. However, in [1 Corinthians 6:16](#) it says 'What? know ye not that he which is joined to an harlot is one body? for two, saith he, shall be one flesh.' So, it seems that even when a man and woman have sexual relations then they do become 'married' in God's eyes.

Now, lesser things like "making out" probably would not start the "marriage". I suspect that the couple would either have to be trying to get pregnant, or do the same thing that would have gotten the woman pregnant. I believe that using 'protection' to prevent pregnancy would not change God's opinion, they would still be 'married'. In [John 4:17-18](#) when Jesus was talking to the Samaritan woman, it says 'The woman answered and said, I have no husband. Jesus said unto her, Thou hast well said, I have no husband: For thou hast had five husbands; and he whom thou now hast is not thy husband: in

that saidst thou truly.' This might be a situation where this woman was married to a man who had many brothers, and over time the brothers died for various reasons, and then the next brother married her. There are laws about this in the Old Testament that if a man dies and has a brother who does not have a wife, that brother should then marry her. This sixth man that Jesus mentions could be the sixth brother who is not yet old enough to marry her but there are plans for him to marry this woman when he is old enough. Or, it could be that in Samaria they have different customs and this woman had been given writs of divorce these 5 times, or some of her husbands dies, and so forth, and now this sixth man she is just engaged to but not yet 'married'. So it seems that even if the couple are not living together, they can still be 'married' in God's eyes if they have had sexual relations.

There is nowhere in the Bible that says a person needs to get or make a marriage certificate before they can be married.

11.4 What does the Bible say about weddings?

Modern weddings are full of meaningless traditions and even pagan rituals. From cutting the cake to throwing the bouquet of flowers, and on and on, people 'have to' follow the Joneses and do what they do so that they are not ridiculed by others, or ashamed that they had such a 'cheap' wedding. They spend thousands and thousands of dollars and they barely get anything out of it other than two rings and maybe a dress that will no longer fit when it is all done with. Then, as the majority will end up getting divorced due to many reasons, they will then gain even more debt while paying for the divorce.

Firstly, does God want us to be in debt? [Proverbs 22:7](#) says 'The rich ruleth over the poor, and the borrower *is* servant to the lender.' [Romans 13:8](#) says 'Owe no man any thing, but to love one another: for he that loveth another hath fulfilled the

law.' Do these verses sound to you like God wants us to be in debt?

Secondly, does God require us to have a wedding ceremony? There are no verses in the Bible saying we have or should have a wedding ceremony. Is it ok to have a wedding ceremony? Sure, I don't think it is a sin or wrong for a couple to have a ceremony that does not put them into debt, and does not contain pagan rituals. Even things that are not pagan rituals but are acts based on superstitions are not healthy to do. Not only are superstitions not true, and doing them will not change or effect the future, but they make you like a slave who is doing these superstitious acts because you are either afraid of bad things happening, or you want good things to happen. Doing those rituals will not change anything in your future for the better. However, doing a pagan ritual can effect your future if it is a satanic ritual that is made to look like something benign. There are many satanic rituals hidden in modern holidays, hollywood movies, music videos, and much more.

I suggest that if you plan on having a wedding ceremony, that you look up the reasons and history for each tradition, even for things that seem benign like cutting the cake, so that you can avoid doing any potential satanic ritual or superstition without knowing it.

11.5 Can we have more than one spouse at the same time?

It is very clear for anyone who has any shred of common sense and reason, once they read the Bible, that we should only have one spouse at any one time. Just because some of the kings in the Bible had more than one wife, that does not mean they were doing so with God's permission. In fact, they were disobeying God, because in [Deuteronomy 17:17](#), talking about kings, it says 'Neither shall he multiply wives to himself, that his heart turn not away: neither shall he greatly multiply to himself silver and gold.' This was written

before Saul and David were kings. Saul and David knew about these verses. Just because they had more than one wife, it does not make it ok for us to do so. Because Jacob coerced Esau to sell his birthright and also stole Esau's blessing is it ok for us to do the same to our brothers? There are many sins, or bad actions that happen in the Bible by good people, but this does not mean that it is ok for us to do those things.

People who preach that they can have more than one spouse only have these examples about the Kings, and Abraham, and Jacob having more than one wife. They cannot find an actual verse that allows them to have more than one spouse, so they post verse examples about them having more than one wife, and then if somebody brings up [Deuteronomy 17:17](#), they then say that that verse only pertains to kings. Why then did God only make Eve for Adam? Why does the Bible say a man and wife will become 'one flesh'? Can three people be 'one flesh'? Or can two women be 'one flesh' with the same man? In modern times, only lustful and uncaring people would seek to have more than one spouse. Do they really care about the emotional suffering of the other people around them?

Sarah convinced Abraham to take her servant as his concubine to give her children by proxy, but if Abraham was wise he would have rejected his wife's plan. Jacob also had a similar situation with his two wives where his wives talked him into taking their servants as concubines. Jacob wouldn't even have had two wives to begin with if Laban did not trick him. Anyway, Jacob could have refused the plans of his wives. Abraham and Jacob, and a few others, are rare exceptions where they are not taking another wife out of lust or greed or anything, but instead they did it to make their wives happy. That still does not make it right, and it does not make it ok for us to do the same.

11.6 But what about if a brother dies?

One example is from [Deuteronomy 25:5](#) that says 'If brethren dwell together, and one of them die, and have no

child, the wife of the dead shall not marry without unto a stranger: her husband's brother shall go in unto her, and take her to him to wife, and perform the duty of an husband's brother unto her.' It is not clear here if the living brother here was already married, so this could be one reason as to why some people in ancient Israel had more than one wife sometimes. Again, we see more evidence here that people can remarry after a spouse dies, or maybe even after a divorce, because if this woman in this verse was not allowed to marry again at all, why would the verse even mention marriage to a stranger? Also, she was allowed to marry the other brother after her husband died, so this is an allowance of a remarriage.

11.7 Will one be hated and the other loved?

In [Deuteronomy 21:15-17](#) it mentions what a man should do if he has two wives but his first-born son is with the wife he hates. This is one clear example in the Bible how a man will love one and hate the other. It is also an example of how perhaps he only married the hated wife out of duty, perhaps because a brother of his died. In the previous paragraph, [Deuteronomy 25](#) describes how a man is shamed if he refuses to marry the wife of a dead brother. In [Matthew 6:24](#) it says 'No man can serve two masters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or else he will hold to the one, and despise the other. Ye cannot serve God and mammon.' Although a wife is not the master of a man, because of the strong bond between a man and a wife, I believe this is a similar situation, and that this verse clearly shows us that we cannot truly love two (or more) wives equally (it will be unfair to one of the wives). If a man has more than one wife, then one of his wives will feel hurt, unloved, jealous, bitter, or other negative emotions. It is not fair to that wife, because we no longer have inheritance laws like Israel once had.

The main reason for the widow to marry a brother of

her dead husband was because of inheritance laws, and because she was able to pass the inheritance down to her children, she was more able to cope with all of the negative emotions of being a second wife. I believe it was meant for the brother of the dead man to take care of his widow so that his nieces and nephews would be taken care of, and to ensure that the first born nephew gets his dead father's inheritance.

In modern times there are no good reasons to have a second wife. There is a big percentage of men in the world who are single, and might want a wife, and we don't have the same inheritance laws now that Israel did.

11.8 What if a man or his wife wants him to have a second wife?

Clearly we no longer have customs in the world about a brother marrying his dead brother's wife, unless if it is in some culture that I haven't heard about. Because of this, I really doubt God would ever want a man to take a second wife in these modern times. Not only that, but it is illegal in many countries (including the USA) to have more than wife (with a marriage certificate). Also because most people in the world who are not Muslims (they can have more than one wife in their religion) would shun a man if he had more than one wife, it is another reason to not have more than one wife. So, for non Muslims, the only religions or denominations that might allow more than one wife are Mormons and perhaps some Messianic groups who are eager to have more wives. Again, it is illegal in the USA, so they would have to either have no marriage certificates at all, or the second 'wife' would have to have no marriage certificate.

11.9 Can there be happiness with two wives?

Using the history in the Bible about David, Abraham, Jacob, and others who had more than one wife, the answer is

clearly 'No'. All of the men in the Bible who had more than one wife and who had stories written about them, had troubles specifically because of having more than one wife. Either their other wives caused problems because of their jealousy, like asking them to take their female servants who then later cause more problems, or the first wife started to despise the man like David's first wife did, or the two wives competed with each other, and so forth. There truly is not one good example in the Bible where a person could say that a man was better off or more happy because he took a second wife. In the cases of Abraham and Jacob, the children suffered and competed with each other specifically because they came from different mothers with different inheritances.

11.10 Don't be so Jealous! Or should you be?

Most people consider jealousy as a bad thing, in any form. However, God himself gets jealous if we serve other gods. God is perfect, and therefor feeling jealousy cannot be a sin. What we decide to do with jealousy, is when it can become a sin. We need to learn how to communicate with our significant others when we feel jealous, and we need to learn when we are going overboard, or blowing things out of proportion. We should talk with our significant others about the things that make us jealous, and what does not, and we should try to understand the jealousy of our significant others.

As I mentioned already in this book, God did not get mad at some men who were jealous of their wives in certain situations, and instead, allowed them to test their wives. In [Numbers 5:11-31](#) it is explained. This shows us that just being Jealous is not a sin, but instead, what we do with it is what matters. We should also not make any false accusation on our spouses, because not only would it be a sin, but it would hurt our spouses feelings. If we see no signs of cheating, and it is just our own worries, then we should probably just go to God in prayer, and not burden our spouses with our worries.

However, if a spouse was supposed to be home in the evening, and didn't come home until the early morning, and didn't even tell you until they got home, then that is definitely something to talk to them about in my opinion. That kind of thing causes severe mistrust, and should never happen. If there was no way for the spouse to tell the other what was happening, then it is more understandable, but it is still something that should be talked about.

We should be careful to not do things that would make our spouses jealous. And if our spouse is just overly jealous, to the point of near insanity, then that is something they should ask God to help them with. We cannot make a person trust us, we cannot make a person feel secure. All we can do is explain things honestly (we should not lie).

11.11 Submission

[Ephesians 5:22-33](#) explains how wives should submit to their husbands because he is the head of the wife. Husbands are supposed to love their wives as their own bodies, and as Christ loved the church. On a ship, there can only be one captain. That captain takes orders from his Admiral back in his homeland. While on the ship, if anyone else tries to give orders in the position of the captain, it would either cause a mutiny or the person who tried to make those unauthorized orders would need to be removed from their position or prevented from giving further orders. As [Proverbs 21:19](#) says, I would also not want to dwell with an argumentative wife. I would divorce her if it continued. [Mark 10](#) shows us that God allowed divorce because of the hardness of hearts. I believe God wouldn't want us to divorce ever, or rarely, but when it comes to cheating or other things I believe God allows it. I wouldn't want to stay married to a woman who cheats, or wants to "wear the pants" in the marriage, and so forth.

What if a wife has an evil or bad husband? Can she disobey him? At some point I would guess she should if it is going to harm children, or other people, etc. Abigail is one

example in the Bible and how she deals with her evil husband Nabal in [1 Samuel 25](#). Nabal refused to help David when David needed his help. David helped Nabal to benefit in the past. David and some of his men went to kill Nabal it seems. Abigail his wife found out about it and sent gifts to David before he got to their house to kill them. Nabal and his wife and family would have died it seems. Later, God smote Nabal and Nabal died. David married Abigail.

In [Genesis 2:20](#) a woman was not found yet for Adam. God refers to this woman as “a helper while he directs” עֵזֶר כְּנֶגְדּוֹ. After she ate from the fruit God told her “he will have dominion over you.” in [Genesis 3:16](#). If you want a better description of these verses refer to my free book “Learning Hebrew from Genesis”.

11.12 Should I marry a virgin?

With how widespread feminism, atheism, secularism, college culture, alcohol and drug use is now, most adult women are no longer virgins. Most adult men are probably not virgins either but in modern society it can be harder for some less confident, less attractive, or shorter men to lose their virginity. Once a “geek” gets a good paying job or a degree that gives the “promise” of a good paying job he is much more likely to find a girlfriend and or wife. Besides that, most women do not seem to care as much if their future husband is a virgin or not, they usually care more about what the man can provide for them, how the man makes them feel, and sometimes even how popular the man is. This concern about virginity is basically asking, are men ok with marrying a woman who is not a virgin. It seems to me that it is split between a good portion of men wanting a virgin or a woman who had few partners, and some men not caring about virginity and more lenient about the womans past. But it seems most men would not want a woman who posted nude pictures or videos of themselves online, which is much more common now with the Onlyfans trend and

other porn sites.

I believe God intended for both the man and woman to be virgins ideally, before marriage, but I believe we are allowed to marry non-virgins. [Hosea](#) was commanded by God to marry a prostitute to teach Israel a lesson, perhaps how God feels when the Israelites worship idols. I am guessing she stopped being a prostitute once he married her.

So, because we don't live in an ideal world, and it is difficult to find virgins, most of us men have to be willing to accept a non-virgin, or we might have to wait longer until a virgin woman is found, which can be difficult. Many of them are probably conservative traditional types who are in small church groups and are already dating guys they want to marry. Or maybe they are in a religious denomination that the guy cannot agree to.

Because of how the world is now, I think it is more important to find a woman with a good heart, who wants to obey God and do God's will, and one who reads and understands the Bible in its true context. And that is not an easy woman to find now.

11.13 Can saints marry in the millennium?

In [Luke 20:33-36](#) (please read the whole chapter to understand the context) it says "Therefore in the resurrection whose wife of them is she? for seven had her to wife. And Jesus answering said unto them, The children of this world marry, and are given in marriage: But they which shall be accounted worthy to obtain that world, and the resurrection from the dead, neither marry, nor are given in marriage: Neither can they die any more: for they are equal unto the angels; and are the children of God, being the children of the resurrection." Jesus said that those who will be resurrected do not marry but are equal to angels.

I believe the Garden of Eden is an example of how God wanted us to live, and how we will live in the millennium, with

maybe a few changes in the millennium. Perhaps the only reason why God gave Adam a helper, Eve, is because he planned for them to have children. In the millennium there will no longer be a need for humans to conceive more children. Because there will not be marriage in the millennium, there also will probably not be a coupling of a man and woman even as a non-sexual partnership. Adam was lonely before Eve was made but in the millennium we will have lots of saints around us, so I doubt we will have any loneliness, and will not have a need for a life partner of the opposite sex.

Chapter 12 Sexuality

12.1 What do you want to hear?

One of the most recent social agendas of the left is the 'discovery' or 'invention' of more genders. The Bible is very clear about how many genders there are, and it is not the topic of this chapter but I needed to address it a bit. If you want to know how many genders there are, then you might be interested in reading the Bible to see what it says. You will see very quickly the position in the Bible about the topic of genders.

I have had to rework this section of my book after the global agenda to push the rainbow acronym agenda onto every possible aspect of our lives. The rainbow agenda was not too pushy until perhaps 2022 and then it continually snowballed from there. Of course, God invented the rainbow and used it as a sign to promise that he would not allow another global flood on the Earth, but satan corrupts everything he can that God makes. The Bible is very clear to us about the question of homosexuality. Read the Bible and you will have your answer. This book is not about listing out what is and what is not a sin, I will probably already have to deal with many Christians who are mad at me for what I say here, I don't want even more leftists and social justice warriors plaguing me. I mean, really, for anyone who even cares what God says in his Bible, these two questions are obvious in the Bible for anyone with a decent amount of mental ability and the desire to see the truth. There is no need for me to preach about them, since many other Christians do. I do have a few topics to mention though.

I used to not worry about what adult homosexuals do in their bedrooms as long as it wasn't hurting children and was consensual. But now with how the rainbow cult pushes propaganda onto children and tries to get them on hormones, hormone blockers, cut off or cut up their genitals, and get them

to watch adults do sexual things, I cannot agree that that is acceptable in society. It makes me think that maybe Sodom and Gomorrah was also doing things like this to children. If homosexuals were not actively trying to hurt children, like it was in the past, then I wouldn't worry about homosexuality in society. If it was just between them and a consensual adult partner, that is between them and God. But if it hurts children, it is much worse.

One of the goals of this chapter is to address the Sodom and Gomorrah assumptions and myths related to homosexuality, and to address how most Christians prioritize sins into groups of 'not so bad' and 'absolutely horrible'. For example, most Christians think it is OK to make a 'white lie' as long as it is for a 'good reason', but if their neighbor smokes pot or drinks a lot, their neighbor is a bad person who is probably 'going to hell' in their eyes. These ideas of different types of sins come straight from the pulpits and colleges and christian books. Sure, some sins have different punishments depending on WHO or WHAT gets hurt or damaged, but sin is sin, and if you do not know what the word sin means, it means to disobey God. It is as simple as that, we don't need to make a big lecture about what sin is and then give a bunch of over complicated analogies.

Anyway, I believe that the Bible classifies sins based on WHO or WHAT is hurt or damaged. They are all sins, but they have different consequences. I'm not going to list out each sin and discern what category of punishment each sin has. It doesn't matter as much as the main topic of this chapter, and we should try to avoid doing any sin. What I will do, is show that we need discernment and a proper perspective, and even respect and love for others.

Because of the marxist-like, nazi-like, often satanic agendas that have been happening after I originally made this chapter, I am adding this as a sort of preface to what I say after this. The pushing of transgenderism and sexual teaching of children at young ages is evil. If a child is not old enough to be

deemed mentally fit to buy cigarettes for themselves, they are probably not also mentally mature enough to make a gender decision that is irreversible. Puberty blockers and gender reassignment surgeries are irreversible and barbaric. Those organs won't grow back and cannot be put back how they were in the same way. I am guessing that if a person is on puberty blockers and they pass the age of puberty, and then go off of the pills, their body has forever missed that opportunity to develop. It is evil for drag groups, or any group, to do or teach sexual things to children who are not of the proper age to learn those things. What is the proper age? I don't know, but I think it was when I was around 13 when the main sexual education subjects came up in my school. I think there was some minor teachings before that. This was probably even too early for me, and unnecessary. Ideally, maybe even after 16 years of age or maybe even 18. Or maybe children don't even need sexual education, and they can learn as an adult before starting a serious relationship. This is not a topic I'm an expert in, but it is clear that now in the world, the globalists are causing the teaching of sexual topics to children way too soon. For years now I have believed that homeschooling is the best way for children, and these topics are just more reasons to homeschool children in my opinion.

Many Christians think homosexuals are a major cause of why our society is messed up, or they think it is one of the biggest issues in our country. Homosexuality is not the reason why so many things are wrong in our world now. The main cause of the problems in our world is how Satan has been changing the social, political, religious, financial, family, and other aspects of the world populations for thousands of years. If you just think that homosexuality is the main or biggest problem, you are very narrow minded and ignorant. Hopefully you know that the word ignorant does not mean stupid, it means that a person does not seek to learn, or avoids learning the truth. Feminism, critical race theory, lack of relationship commitment, marxism-like teachings, extra taxes, inflation, evolution theory, and so many other things are causing so much harm, a person should not point their finger at just one topic

and say it is the main problem.

12.2 Did God destroy Sodom because of homosexuality?

Let us look at what the Bible says. [Genesis 13:13](#) says 'But the men of Sodom *were* wicked and sinners before the LORD exceedingly.' Does this mention homosexuality? No. This means that AMONG homosexuality, they had more sin. Do you think Sodom was the only city in Biblical times where homosexuality was OK and encouraged? If you believe Sodom and Gomorrah were the only cities that popularized homosexuality during Biblical times, then you really should start studying ancient history more. If homosexuality was somewhat common in history (supposedly it was), why didn't God destroy every city that practiced it?

[Genesis 18:20](#) says 'And the LORD said, Because the cry of Sodom and Gomorrah is great, and because their sin is very grievous;' Who's cry? Does it make sense that willing, consensual homosexual sex would cause victims who cry out in misery? Obviously there are so many cries from VICTIMS in these cities, that God feels a need to do something about this. Do you still think this is just about homosexuality? Do you see that God gave two different reasons in verse 20 above?

[Genesis 19:5](#) says 'And they called unto Lot, and said unto him, Where *are* the men which came in to thee this night? bring them out unto us, that we may know them.' Does this sound to you like the mob outside the house is asking for permission to be with the angels who came to Lot? Does it sound to you like they want consensual relations with other men?

[Genesis 19:9](#) says 'And they said, Stand back. And they said *again*, This one *fellow* came in to sojourn, and he will needs be a judge: now will we deal worse with thee, than with them. And they pressed sore upon the man, *even* Lot, and came near to break the door.' Do you see? These men in Sodom wanted to rape the angels, and then Lot after he refused their

demands. What do you think hurts a person more, consensual sex or being raped? Who do you think God gets mad at more, rapists or people having questionable consensual sex? Do you still think this is about homosexuality? Here is your answer right from the Bible in [Genesis 19:13](#) 'For we will destroy this place, because the cry of them is waxen great before the face of the LORD; and the LORD hath sent us to destroy it.' The angels DID NOT say it was because of homosexuality here, the angles said it was BECAUSE of the cry of them, them who? The VICTIMS who the people of Sodom and Gomorrah had been raping and probably killing.

Again, do you really think that there would be grievous crying happening among consensual sexual partners, crying that would move God to destroy cities? God destroyed Sodom and Gomorrah because they were RAPING and probably killing people. Of course all of the other sins that the inhabitants of the cities were doing added to the overall reason, but the reason why God destroyed the cities, was because of the VICTIMS who cried out. This is clear because God and the angels all said it was because of the crying out of the people. Which people? The victims that were being raped it seems. There could have also been slavery being done, stealing, forced prostitution, satan worship (human sacrifices and abuse), or any other number of things that could have been done to people to make them cry out to God, but the one example that we have of the sins of Sodom and Gomorrah, are that they intended to RAPE, and would have done so if the angels did not use God's power to blind the mob. Sure, they did want to rape other men, but again, I ask you, which is a more grievous thing, rape or consensual homosexual sex? Which one do you think makes people cry out to God more? Which one do you think God gets more mad about?

We need to avoid picking out one sin, and pointing our finger at it, and forget about our own lies, or our thefts, or our abuses of our fellow human beings. If one has a skewed moral system, they might end up hurting people around them, thinking proudly that 'at least I'm not a homosexual', while they

beat up their spouse, or cheat on their spouse, or steal, and do other things to make people cry out to God against them in complaint. I believe that God sent the angels to get Lot out of Sodom, but also as a final test for the people of Sodom. They must have known about Lot's God. When they saw that Lot had guests, they had a choice to either let them come in peace, or try to hurt and rape them. Because the people did not want to change their ways, and stop raping people, they were destroyed. Of course, they did other sins other than rape.

In [Judges chapters 19 and 20](#), there is a very similar situation where a man and his concubine went into a city of Israel (in the tribe of Benjamin), and the people of the city seemingly wanted to abuse or rape the man who was lodging the night in an old man's house as a guest. The old man said he would give them his virgin daughter and the man's concubine but they refused. The man took his concubine out to them and they raped the woman but for some reason they didn't seem to do anything to the man. The rest of Israel demanded that the evil men of that city be delivered to them, but they refused. Later, it seems that all of the men of Benjamin were slain, or at least in the cities that the Israelites came to. This battle against Benjamin was God's will, as God commanded them to fight them because of these evil men and how the tribe of Benjamin defended them. No act of homosexuality was committed in the event concerning the man with the concubine, but yet God still wanted those evil men dealt with and at least some of their cities burned after the tribe of Benjamin defended them. Why? Probably because they were rapists, and wicked men. Even if they originally intended on raping the man, they changed their minds. Should the evil men be killed for something they didn't do? It should be clear to us that these evil men were killed because they were evil, and rapists, not because of homosexuality.

12.3 Can God move in a homosexual's life?

Am I saying it is ok or acceptable to be homosexual? Again, read the Bible for yourself, it is clear. I have no desire to repeat what the Bible says on this topic just so that leftists and haters can use it as fuel to say I am making 'hate speech'. The question that we should really ask is, can God move in a homosexual's life? Of course he can. He can call them to be saved, he can call them to repent, He can even use them to help other people. Assuming that a homosexual is 'going to hell' would be like assuming a cheater who is cheating on their spouse is 'going to hell'. Both are sexual situations. Both situations involve consensual (usually) sex. Is there really much difference in the two situations? Can God move in the life of a cheater? What this boils down to is that many churches chose homosexuality as one of their pet-peeves, and that is one of their choice ways of saying if a person is good or not, or if they are 'going to hell' or not.

Of course, when it comes to ministers and people who are doing work for God, God usually wants them to live a more pure life, because they are in the public spotlight. There is also the moving of the Spirit of God, and how if we sin we can effect the movement of God. However, all of us sin, and if anyone says they no longer sin, I would stay away from them.

All sin is disobedience to God, sure they have different consequences, but when we come to talk to God in prayer, any sin can cause a division between us and God, and needs repentance. Why should we say that one sin is so horrible, but another one is not a big deal?

I believe that God helps us through our problems and sins, one at a time, or maybe a few at a time. If we get born again, and immediately try to stop all sin and never sin again, we are going to fail. We need God to help us through it all. With one person, God might be dealing with their lying, with another person, God might be dealing with their excessive drinking, etc.

Do you really think that God is going to tell a homosexual that he doesn't want anything to do with them until they stop being a homosexual? Has God ever told you that he doesn't want anything to do with you until you stop lying? Lying hurts people, so why do you lie to people? Do you think God likes it when you lie to other people? You might twist it in your mind to make it sound like you don't lie, but that won't change what it really is, a lie. Do you see my point now?

12.4 What should we do then?

We need to be more caring to other people like God is. Sure, we can have some rules in our house or church for guests who come to visit, but do you think Jesus would want us to have a guard at the door to keep homosexuals out? That is not what Jesus would do. Do you think that Jesus would lecture a homosexual every time he saw them? I don't think he would. I think he would tell them that he loves them and will help them if they allow him to. Clearly a leader of a church has a responsibility to regulate what is said by teachers in their church. For example, they shouldn't allow a satanist or atheist to teach to the congregation about how wonderful their beliefs are, but if an atheist was in the church just listening, should the atheist be kicked out? I would say no. Do you see my point?

12.5 Is sex only for making children?

I suggest that you read all of [1 Corinthians chapter 7](#), and all of the book of [Song of Solomon](#). It should be clear to you after reading all of that. Having an unnecessarily strict marriage can cause a spouse to feel neglected or emotionally unattached, or worse. This might lead to a spouse later giving into a temptation that might not have otherwise tempted them. There is no verse in the Bible that says sex is only for making children.

12.6 Can a husband and wife commit fornication with each other?

In [1 Corinthians 7:2](#) it says 'Nevertheless, *to avoid* fornication, let every man have his own wife, and let every woman have her own husband.' This verse seems to be a clear hint that fornication is something that is done outside of marriage. It is also a hint that the word 'fornication' is not used to describe things done in a marriage between a husband and a wife. In [1 Corinthians 5:1](#) it says 'It is reported commonly *that there is* fornication among you, and such fornication as is not so much as named among the Gentiles, that one should have his father's wife.' Here is a hint that fornication is a man or woman doing something sexual with a person that they are not married to. In [Jude 1:7](#) it says 'Even as Sodom and Gomorrhah, and the cities about them in like manner, giving themselves over to fornication, and going after strange flesh, are set forth for an example, suffering the vengeance of eternal fire.' This verse could be referring to the raping that the people of Sodom and Gomorrhah did to strangers or even to others in their cities, or perhaps the other sexual things they did outside of marriage.

12.7 When does a fetus become alive?

Or maybe I should ask when a fetus in the womb is given a spirit or 'soul'? In [Luke 1:41](#) it says 'And it came to pass, that, when Elisabeth heard the salutation of Mary, the babe leaped in her womb; and Elisabeth was filled with the Holy Ghost:' This is proof that there was a spirit in John who was in the womb of his mother at that time, and that John was able to hear or at least sense something about Mary and Jesus in her womb. It is unclear how far along John was in the womb, but it was probably no more than 6 months because [Luke 1:56](#) says 'And Mary abode with her about three months, and returned to her own house.' Then the next verse says that Elisabeth, John's mother was ready to be delivered. Mary could have left months before Elisabeth was at full term, but it seems

that she left right around the time that Elisabeth was ready to give birth. It could even be that a spirit is put into a fetus even at conception. [Psalm 139:13](#) says 'For thou hast possessed my reins: thou hast covered me in my mother's womb.' and later in [verse 16](#) it says 'Thine eyes did see my substance, yet being unperfect; and in thy book all *my members* were written, *which* in continuance were fashioned, when *as yet there was* none of them.' This verse seems to suggest that even at conception either the baby's spirit is present or at the very least that God has plans for the baby and is watching the forming of the baby. [Jeremiah 1:5](#) says 'Before I formed thee in the belly I knew thee; and before thou camest forth out of the womb I sanctified thee, *and* I ordained thee a prophet unto the nations.'

12.8 Sodomite in the KJV

The [KJV](#) translated word sodomite is not translated well, and it is not even a transliteration. It is קדשׁ H6945 used 5 times and comes from the stem קדשׁ.ק.7 H6942 which means “to set-apart, sanctify, misc”. If the word was transliterated, it would be 'Qadeish'. The related word קדשׁה 'Qedeishah' translated as 'harlot' or 'whore' H6948 is better translated but still not the best translation. I believe that both קדשׁ and קדשׁה should be translated as 'man/woman set-apart to ther gods'. קדשׁ is the masculine, and this is probably why the [KJV](#) translates it as 'sodomite', because it would refer to a male and satanists practice homosexual rituals with their “priests”, and most pagan religions follow this trend. So, yes, these satanists probably were doing homosexual things, but, not always, and it is not the most accurate translation. This is because the word 'sodomite' changes the focus of the meaning from the fact that the satanist is worshipping other gods, and is not just a physical whore, but a spiritual whore who is rejecting God and worshipping a demon, satan, or man-made idol. The homosexual aspects are secondary, and I believe they are not the main reason why God is upset with these whores who sereve other gods.

Many cultures have practiced homosexuality, and they were not destroyed like Sodom was. My point is that God chooses to punish sins differently, depending on how severe they are. I believe that when people worship satan, demons, or idols, it is one of the most severe sins, and should not be compared with other sins, except for perhaps, murder, rape, and other horribly violent sins.

Chapter 13 God's Will

13.1 In Jesus name

Many Christians think that either because of their entitlement of being saved, or because they have been, or believe they have been given a gift of the Spirit, that they can just declare something in Jesus name and God has to do it. There probably are appropriate times where we do need to make declarations in Jesus name, and then God will move when it is his will. We cannot and should not expect God to do everything that we want, when we want.

There are many verses that this myth is based on where some Christians almost use Jesus name as a magic word that gets them what they want. Just because you look at a verse and assume that it is talking about you, and so you then declare in Jesus name that you will have luxury goods come to you in your near future, does not mean that it will happen. We do not have control over God's power, and we cannot make God do things. Every time we declare something in Jesus name, God has the choice to either act on it in that moment, in the future, or he may even act on it in a completely different way than what we wanted and expected. If you declare for example that you will get a Lamborghini in your near future, God probably is not going to honor that. Not many people could stay humble while owning a Lamborghini, and not many people could remain upright while dealing with all of the new temptations that come along with owning luxury items.

I am not saying that God does not want good things for us, I am just saying that we need to consider God's will, and God's timing. Even when it is God's will for something to be done, he might not choose to do it until a time far in the future, or he may do it immediately, and we need to learn to accept that.

[Psalm 37:4](#) is one of the verses that some people use for

this 'name it and claim it' myth. It says 'Delight thyself also in the LORD; and he shall give thee the desires of thine heart.' I believe that this verse means that God will change our hearts, or put things in our hearts, so that we desire the things that God desires us to have. In other words, this verse does not mean that we simply have to delight ourselves in God, and if we really really want a lamborghini he will give it to us. If our desires line up with his will, then of course he will give us what we want eventually, but how often has God given luxury vehicles or luxury items to people? I believe that this verse is talking about upright things that we should desire, like, a family, financial stability, acces to his Bible, a place to live, clothing, food, and so forth.

In my Book "What is Truth?" I have written about a few religions that use the Bible as a basis to say that their priests, pastors, or leaders of their church can make commands or dictates, and then God will and must do what that priest or leader dictated. This is another, older form of this 'name it and claim it' type of myth where God's will is not taken into account. It ends up being about control, either the individual wants to control God to do what they want God to do, or people want to control other people by thinking and saying that they can control God.

[Mark 11:24](#) is another verse that myth believers use to back up their false doctrines. It says 'Therefore I say unto you, What things soever ye desire, when ye pray, believe that ye receive *them*, and ye shall have *them*.' This is when people ignore or forget context. Who was Jesus talking to? He was talking to the Disciples it seems (you should read the whole chapter), because Jesus answered peter when he spoke [verse 24](#). We should never assume anything about scripture. By context, and the fact that Jesus is talking to peter when he said that verse, it seems that [verse 24](#) only applies to Peter, and possibly other people like him, like disciples or evangelists, or ministers. In other words, this verse either does not apply to everyone on the planet, because if it did, then that would mean that even satanists can pray to God and whatsoever they ask for in faith, they will get, or it means we do not understand this

verse correctly. What if a satanist prays for every christian in their town to be killed instantly and then believes in faith that God will do it. Is God then bound by this verse to kill every christian in that satanists town? Of course not. Do you really think that satanists would not try this trick, or have not already tried it? It is clear that God is only speaking about some people. That only some people who fit his criteria will be given what they ask for. I believe that the thing we ask for has to be within God's will for us. I believe that Peter's heart was right enough that Jesus knew that whatever Peter would ask God, would be something that Peter actually needed, or somebody else needed, so that is why Jesus said that to Peter.

Now, concerning when a person is given a 'gift' of healing, and they pray for people, and some of them get healed, did God give that 'healer' power. or is it God's power flowing through the 'healer'? Of course it is God's power flowing through the 'healer', and not the actual power that the 'healer' has, because if the 'healer' had his own ability to heal people without God saying yes or no to it, then it would in fact be the 'healer' who healed people, and not God. In that hypothetical case where the 'healer' would have their own power, then that healer would be getting all of the glory, and not God. Do you really think this is how God does things? Would God really give a person a power to heal people whenever they wanted to, without God having any say in it? Why do you think we need to pray in Jesus name? Because it is by his power and authority that the healing or miracle happens, it is not power that comes from a human. If you have been given the 'gift' of healing, and you think it is 'your power', and you pray for people, and they get healed, you need to be very careful, because you might be tempted with pride in thinking that you did the actual healing.

Joni Eareckson, in her book “A Step Further” suggests that to pray “in Jesus name” should probably include asking for God's will to be done, since even Jesus asked for God's will to be done even when he was facing having to accomplish an extremely difficult task in the future ([Luke 22:42](#)). Also, the Hebrew word for “name” can also mean “authority”, or “reputation”. If praying “in Jesus name” means we should pray

according to his reputation, then I would suggest that includes that we ask the Father to do his will after making a request to him. This is because Jesus himself asked for the Father to do his will, after Jesus made a request to him. Jesus also showed us an example of how to pray with the “Our father” prayer. Because Jesus showed us an example of how to pray, we should look at his other prayers also as a guide.

Another verse that some might take out of context to say that they can ask for anything they want from God and God will give it to them, is [Luke 11:9](#). The verse before ([verse 8](#)), Jesus mentions that the person “will rise and give him as many as he needeth.” [Verse 11](#) mentions a son who asks for bread, which again tells us in context that all of these [verses from 8 to 11](#) are talking about what we need, not just anything we might want like a luxury.

In [Luke 17:6](#) people might assume that they can move a tree by faith and have it be planted in water. Again, we need to think about context in the Bible. Jesus was still talking to his disciples which he addressed in [Luke 17:1](#) In [Luke 17:5](#), his apostles ask him to increase their faith, and Jesus answers them with [verse 6](#). So, does this mean everyone can move trees with faith? It seems to me that only certain called people, like apostles are given the calling and faith to do things like that, and God's will is still a factor. I believe that apostles or disciples would not ask for a tree or mountain to be moved, unless it was needed for some reasons. I do not believe that they would just do it for fun or as a test. So, this is perhaps why Jesus says to the apostles that trees could be moved by their faith (but God's power), because God knows that the apostles would only command things to be done by faith that God would approve of. If anyone can tell a tree to move by faith and it would move, then maybe hitler, or mao, or some other evil person could have done this? I do not believe this is how God uses his power when people have faith.

13.2 What about Sampson?

You might be thinking, 'What about Sampson'? In [Judges 14:19](#) the Spirit of God came upon Sampson, and this clearly seems why he was able to kill those 30 men. [Judges 15:14-17](#) tell about how the Spirit of God came on Sampson and he killed a thousand men. In [Judges 16:17-20](#) Sampson lost his gift of strength it seems when Delilah cut his hair which was long because of his Nazarite vow. In [Judges 16:28-31](#), Sampson had to ask again for power to bring down the palace upon them all (he was a prisoner in the palace). Just because Sampson was given a gift from God, was he able to use it whenever he wanted? It seems to me that the only time big miracles of strength happened with him were when the Spirit of God moved on him.

13.3 A lesson from Job

I suggest that you read the entire book of Job. God put a hedge of protection around Job, and so satan complained and said that Job would curse God if satan was allowed to afflict Job. So God allowed satan to test Job, and Job lost everything, even his health went bad. The only thing satan was not allowed to do was to kill Job. Job however did not curse God, even when his wife said he should. After the trials, Job had even more than what he had before the trials started. My point is that sometimes God allows us to go through trials, and we cannot make commands in Jesus name to change some trials that God wants us to go through, because it is always God's choice when we ask for things in Jesus name. God knows what we need, and when we need it. If God gave us everything we wanted then we would probably end up being spoiled brats who do not respect or obey God. If we are going through trials we should ask God for help, and for him to explain to us the things we need to know, and for the patience to deal with things we do not understand. I believe that sometimes we should not question God why he does or allows things. Perhaps sometimes it is ok,

but God does not always owe us an explanation. Does a General in a battle tell his officers why he is giving the orders that he is giving? Sometimes during a battle there is no time to explain things. Sometimes even if there is time, the officers might mess up the plan if they know what the General was going to do in the battle. Sometimes the General calls the officers to his dinner table, and explains what the plans are for the battle, before the battle.

13.4 If we are suffering is it the result of sin?

If we are not getting healed, or if something bad happens to us, is it because we are sinning? It could be, but look at Job, it might be a test in our life, or God might be allowing it for some other important reason. Like I have explained before, many Christians think that if we do not forgive other people (even when they do not acknowledge their wrong doing, and do not ask for forgiveness), then God will not hear our prayers, and etc. It is common when a person gets prayed for, and they do not get healed, or their problem in life does not immediately get fixed, that many Christians will ask the person if they have 'unforgiveness' in their hearts, or if they have any sin against God that might be the problem. It is of course always good to examine ourselves, but we should also know that injuries and problems do not always mean that we are doing something wrong. [John 16:33](#) says "These things I have spoken unto you, that in me ye might have peace. In the world ye shall have tribulation: but be of good cheer; I have overcome the world." [Psalm 34:19](#) says "Many *are* the afflictions of the righteous: but the LORD delivereth him out of them all." Should we then shun or accuse people of things who get prayed for but do not see immediate results?

<https://www.openbible.info/topics/suffering>

13.5 Is every promise in the Bible for me?

Are the promises given to Abraham for everyone in the Bible? Do the blessings that Jacob made to his sons apply to us all? Do the blessings of one son of Jacob apply to the other sons? We need to read the Bible in context and not make assumptions about the Bible. There is a myth in Christianity that basically assumes that any blessing in the Bible that is declared is for anyone who reads it. I believe that God can indeed show us a promise in the Bible that was made to somebody else in the Bible, and use it as a way to tell us that we will also receive a similar blessing as that person did. I also believe that God can literally tell us specific messages from himself by having us read a specific verse in the Bible, even if it is out of context in that one situation compared to the rest of that chapter of the Bible. My point is that in general, we need to be very careful to keep the Bible in context, and not assume anything about the verses in the Bible, but there are times when God can tell us specific things in our lives by using the words in the Bible. This does not mean that we should just go crazy and randomly pick a spot in the Bible to read any time we want to hear from God, but it might not hurt at all to try it sometime as long as we keep in my that what we read might not have anything to do with us. I mean, is God going to give us a specific message from himself every time we randomly open the Bible? I don't believe so. We need to be very careful, and we need to ask God to confirm any message he sends us with a second message, or some other means of ensuring us that it was a message from him.

In [Judges 6:36-40](#), Gideon asked God to confirm his message a second time, and God did confirm his message a second time. Sometimes we might know right away, on the first time God tells us something, but sometimes we might need a confirmation sign or message if we are not sure. We should not

do dumb things like jump off of a high place and then ask God to protect us, just to have a miracle done. [Luke 4:9-12](#) is an example of that concept. But when we are not sure about something, I believe it is ok for us to ask God to give us a confirmation sign or some other way to know for sure.

13.6 Should we sell our belongings and give money away?

People who preach that we should sell our belongings and give the money away are taking [Luke 12:33](#) and probably other verses out of context. Starting in [Luke 12:22](#), Jesus is talking to his disciples. The disciples were doing the work of God's Kingdom on Earth at that time, and once Jesus died for our sins and was resurrected, their knew missions would probably be preaching, among other things. Like how Jesus sent them out before two by two, and told them to take nothing extra, the disciples might have been living a special life of going from one house to the next preaching and doing other work in the Kingdom of God. This does not mean that all Shepherds or “pastors” should do this, but perhaps some people will be called in modern times to sell their belongings and give the money into the Kingdom of God here on Earth.

[Luke 18:22](#) is another verse that people might assume is relevant to every Christian, or that every Christian should sell their belongings. But what most people fail to realize is that again, Jesus seems to be telling this rich man to follow him like an apostle would follow him, as you can see at the end of the verse. Jesus wasn't telling a crowd of people to sell their belongings, just that wealthy man. It may have even just been a special test for that rich man, and not even something expected of every apostle-type of follower.

Chapter 14 Pentecostalism

14.1 Speaking in tongues?

If you came from or are in a denomination that does not believe in 'speaking in tongues' or the 'baptism of the Holy Spirit' then you might want to skip this chapter unless if you are curious to learn more about these things. There are different beliefs among the many Pentecostal denominations regarding 'speaking in tongues'. Some of them believe that speaking in tongues is something that every mature Christian is supposed to do, or at least supposed to be able to do. Some of these denominations believe that if a person has not yet been 'filled with the Holy Spirit' then they should ask God to fill them with the Holy Spirit. They even sometimes tell their church members that in order to achieve a mature level of Christianity, they must be 'filled with the Spirit' and then 'speak in tongues'.

Most Pentecostal denominations believe that speaking in tongues is 'proof' that the person was 'filled with the Spirit'. They often also call this 'filling of the Spirit' the 'baptism of the Holy Spirit'. They sometimes call people to the front who want to be baptized by the Holy Spirit, and then people in the church pray for them. I doubt a study has been done to see how many people 'fail' to be baptized by the Holy Spirit', but it is a common enough occurrence for people to 'fail' to speak in tongues while seeking to be baptized by the Holy Spirit that these people who 'failed' to be baptized are not really shunned. However, they are sometimes told that maybe they have sinned and need to repent for something they did, or maybe they do not have enough faith, etc.

These denominations believe that God is simply going to baptize a person immediately when the person asks the Holy Spirit to baptize them, and if it does not happen then it must be the person's fault who asked to be baptized. This can lead to a frustrating cycle of prayer times with the elders or leaders of

the church, with continued failures to be 'Baptized by the Holy Spirit'. In most Pentecostal churches, a major focus is put on being 'Baptized by the Holy Spirit'.

Water baptism is also usually important in these denominations, but water baptism is usually not seen by them as being as important as being baptized by the Holy Spirit. These Pentecostal beliefs usually make it more difficult for them to fellowship with other denominations that do not believe in speaking in tongues or in spiritual gifts.

14.2 Is it real?

Clearly, the New Testament (NT) mentions speaking in tongues in the book of [Acts](#) and other places. It is also clearly more than just a person knowing more than one language and speaking one after the other. It is also clear in the NT that the speaker doesn't really know the language that the hearers are hearing. In [Genesis 10:5](#) it is very clear that the word 'tongue' refers to a language, and not the person's tongue inside their mouth. That same word in the Old Testament (OT) can also mean a literal tongue in a mouth, but in this verse it is clearly talking about a language. It is common for tongue to mean a language in the OT. So, when the NT mentions 'speaking in tongues' it should be clear to us that it is talking about a real language.

14.3 What is real speaking in tongues like?

One amazing revelation as to how 'speaking in tongues' was done in the book of Acts is by the testimony of Ron Wyatt. I believe that it was in one of the Sinai videos in the link below where his wife tells about his experience in Saudi Arabia which is a Muslim nation with their main language being Arabic. During one of Ron's visits to investigate the real Mt. Sinai, they arrested Ron. While Ron was in jail, they had a TV on in front

of him with Muslim teachings and other things in the Arabic language. One program came on with an Imam teaching in what Ron thought was English, because Ron was able to understand all of that teaching. Ron did not know Arabic (maybe a few words though). He later found out that there were no teachings in English on that show and that an Imam would never teach about Islam in English. Later, while some Imam's and other important people were talking to him about Mt. Sinai, Ron was able to use the information from the TV show he saw and he quoted a part about the show (I think it was a quote of the Quran). Ron was speaking in English, and they knew he did not speak Arabic, he even had an interpreter to help him talk to these Arabic people. Ron was talking in English but suddenly the Imams and others were astonished because they understood Ron before the interpreter even started to speak. The quote that Ron was talking about, about the TV show, helped to convince the Arabs of the importance of the real Mt. Sinai location, because it would not have been important to the Saudi Arabian people until Ron explained that quote about Prophets being important (and they considered Moses a prophet).

Anyway, Ron experienced two miracles of 'speaking in tongues'. The first part was when God translated what the Imam was saying on the TV in Arabic to English so that Ron could understand it. The second part was when God translated what Ron was saying in English about the quote from the TV show directly into Arabic so that the Imams and others could understand it. I believe that 'speaking in tongues' is one person speaking a language, and then God translates it so that people hear it in their own language. I believe that this is the same kind of thing happened in the first few verses of [Acts chapter 2](#).

I believe that there can also be messages spoken to a gathering of saints by God that is done 'in tongues' and then often somebody else will interpret it in a language that the congregation can understand. Verses that talk about this are [1 Corinthians 12:30](#), [14:5](#), [14:13](#), and [14:27](#).

<https://www.youtube.com/channel/UC0YSrkQExLWydEhtoOTAZaQ/videos>

14.4 Can a person fake it?

A person can just speak their own gibberish in an attempt to fake 'speaking in tongues' if they wanted to be deceitful in public. I believe that speaking in tongues is done with real languages, and not gibberish, as [Acts 19:6](#) shows us. One might think that speaking in tongues is some cyptic, coded, or magical thing that cannot be decoded sometimes, but this verse also mentions that people prophesied, which means they used real words that somebody on the planet would understand, otherwise there is no point in prophesying. I believe that God doesn't do anything if there is no point to it or if it is in vain. Not only that, but in my book "What is Truth?" (section 4.90) I describe how this word "tongues" here came from Hebrew originally, and that it can also mean "language". Even when "tongue" is used as a translation for that Hebrew word, it usually refers to "language". This shows us that "tongues" in this verse is not some mystical or unknowable thing, it is simply a speaking of a language that the Spirit of God helps the person to speak. This is probably done as a witnessing method, so that a person hears their own language being spoken, hears a prophecy or message in their language, and later finds out that the speaker doesn't even know the language they spoke. In this case they were not babbling in a mystical gibberish in order to "make things happen" or "pray through something", it just happened because it seems God wanted it to happen as a sign or witnessing method.

Ironically though, I believe that we can pray to God with our spirit. Essentially, we can speak gibberish in private prayer to God where we focus on a few words, a whole sentence, or a whole thought, and then just speak gibberish in order to speak that idea or emotion to God. God can hear our thoughts when we pray to him in our mind without words, so this method of speaking gibberish while praying alone to God is not really that different than a silent prayer. One difference though, is that it can allow us to focus on whole sentences or

ideas, and not have to speak in our mind with words. It can essentially allow us to pray faster because we are no longer focusing on the right words to use to form sentences. I believe that Hezekiah did something like this in [Isaiah 38:14](#). It seems clear that Isaiah was alone in that time speaking to God, and I think if we are going to speak gibberish, it should be alone where nobody else can hear it, because there are verses mentioning that speaking in tongues in public needs an interpretation. [1 Corinthians 14](#) basically describes this better than how I am saying it so I recommend that you read the whole chapter, but specifically [verse 27 and 28](#) at least.

14.5 Is it for everyone?

It should be clear to us by [1 Corinthians 12:27-31](#) that the gift of 'speaking in tongues' is not for everyone. Some people take [Mark 16:17](#) as meaning that every 'saint' should be able to speak in tongues. However verse 18 after it is also part of the same list of signs that believers will do, and it lists them taking up serpents or drinking toxic or poisonous things and not being hurt. Should we all then pick up serpents? Some cults or groups of believers think so, so they have a ritual about picking up snakes. It should be clear to us by the context of [Mark 16:14-18](#) that this is just a list of things saints as a group will do, and that one single saint will not do all of these signs, but perhaps just one or two of them.

14.6 When should tongues be spoken?

I believe that we should not 'speak in tongues' in public unless it is a message from God that will be interpreted so that the congregation can understand. If the congregation does not understand your words, what good does it do? Does it distract? Are you able to whisper speaking in tongues so as to not distract people if you feel you need to pray in tongues out loud? [1 Corinthians 14:2](#), [1 Corinthians 14:23](#), and [1](#)

[Corinthians 14:27-28](#) tells us that people should not speak in tongues to a congregation unless it is a message from God that can be interpreted.

14.7 Was Pentecost the first time the Holy Spirit came to saints?

Many Pentecostal denominations believe that indeed Pentecost was the first time that the Holy Spirit moved on saints. They use the verses in [Acts 2:14-21](#) to support their belief in that myth. But none of those verses use the phrase “Holy Spirit” but instead say “my Spirit”. I have shown in other places in this book how the Spirit of God has moved in the Old Testament. Clearly Pentecost was not the first time that the Spirit of God has moved. It does seem clear that in these 'last days' that God's Spirit is and will move more abundantly.

14.8 What are the gifts of the Spirit?

In [1 Corinthians 12:8-11](#) it says 'For to one is given by the Spirit the word of wisdom; to another the word of knowledge by the same Spirit; To another faith by the same Spirit; to another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit; To another the working of miracles; to another prophecy; to another discerning of spirits; to another *divers* kinds of tongues; to another the interpretation of tongues: But all these worketh that one and the selfsame Spirit, dividing to every man severally as he will.' As [verse 11](#) shows, one person probably is not going to be given all of these gifts, and may only be given one of them.

14.9 What is the Kingdom of Heaven?

The phrase “kingdom of heaven” is used many times in the book of Matthew. If you have not read Matthew yet, there

are many reasons why you might want to. One of the main reasons, is to better understand what the “kingdom of heaven” is. If you want a quick reference, you can use a strong's concordance or BlueLetterBible.org to search for “kingdom of heaven”, and it will quickly help you to understand what the “kingdom of heaven” is.

There are essentially two or more phases of the kingdom of heaven. Although Matthew does not explain it, it is my belief that there were many phases to it before Jesus was born into flesh. For example, there was the phase in the Garden of Eden, then the phase after Adam and Eve sinned, where they still tried to obey God (Abel made a pleasing sacrifice to God), then the phase after the flood with Noah, then the phase with Abraham, Egypt, the Exodus, and so forth. All of these phases have one thing in common, just like [Matthew 7:21](#) says 'Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth the will of my Father which is in heaven.' The kingdom of heaven is doing the will of God as one of his children. Even ancient Israel had a way for non-Jews to be "grafted in" to be part of Israel. Anyway, the first main phases of the kingdom of heaven are all spiritual, as in, there was not a physical kingdom with a castle and so forth.

The next phase of the kingdom of heaven was when Israel was given a real kingdom, with kings, starting with King Saul. This kingdom was basically destroyed by the romans shortly after Jesus was crucified around 0 AD. This physical kingdom had the same purpose of doing God's will. Therefore, it is not a stretch to say that it is also part of the kingdom of heaven. In [1 Samuel 8:7](#) God told Samuel that it was not him that Israel was rejecting by wanting a king like the other nations, but that Israel was rejecting God as being their king. I believe that God intended for there to always be judges and not Kings over Israel, but that God gave them Kings because of their stiffnecked ways. These times of the Judges were more like the 'spiritual' kingdom of heaven, where people looked directly to God as the King.

After that, we only had the "spiritual" kingdom of heaven again through Jesus. I believe that even non-saved Jews

could be doing God's will during this time, and therefore must of had a place also in this phase of the kingdom.

In modern times, Isreal once again is a nation.

Therefore we once again have both a physical and spiritual 'kingdom of heaven'. Now, modern Isreal has parts of it that rules without any regard for the Bible, so obviously only the parts that are doing God's will could be considered as being a part of the kingdom of heaven. But the land was given by God long ago to Isreal, and even in these modern times God has miraculously defended Israel from it's persecutors. Not every christian considers themselves as being part of Isreal spiritually, and those christians who consider themselves to be separate than Jews who do the will of God, can still be saved. In other words, we do not have to identify as being part of Israel, or with Israel, to be saved, but the Bible is clear that Jews and 'gentiles' who do the will of God, are all still his children. I say this because there are many references in the Old testament for Isreal and followers of God as being reffered to as children of God. So even for Jews who are not saved even now, I beleive they could still be considered a child of God in some ways if they do his will. And for those who do his will, God would of course try to lead them to salvation through Jesus in their future at some point.

Next, during the Milenium, we will again have a real, physical kingdom again. [Matthew 8:11](#) says 'And I say unto you, That many shall come from the east and west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven.' This is a fairly solid proof of a kingdom after Jesus comes back for us, because, there is no description in the Bible about saints who died having any kind of rule again until after Jesus comes back. Once again, saints will be doing God's will in this kingdom, because, doing God's will is the kingdom.

14.10 What is the Kingdom of God?

It seems very clear that the kingdom of God and the kingdom of heaven are the same exact thing, just that Mark and

Luke exclusively prefer to call it the “kingdom of God”, while Matthew almost entirely uses the phrase “kingdom of heaven” except for 5 places. Even [Mark 1:15](#) seems to be saying the same thing that [Matthew 4:17](#) is saying but they each use a different term, one “kingdom of God”, and the other “kingdom of heaven”.

Some teachers like to make the kingdom of God and the kingdom of heaven as being two separate things, because they either do not understand either one, or because they want to develop a complicated teaching method to either look important or to make money by books or media sales, or worse.

14.11 What is tree grafting?

The website below says “Grafting is a technique that joins two plants into one. In general, a wound is created on one of the plants, and the other is inserted into that wound so each plant's tissues can grow together. The wound needs to be protected until it heals to avoid pests and diseases entering the graft.” An apple tree branch, for example, would continue to produce apples, even when it is grafted onto a pear tree which is producing pears.

<https://www.thespruce.com/what-does-grafting-mean-4125565>

14.12 Can I join Israel if I am not Jewish?

Not only is the story of [Ruth](#) in the book of [Ruth](#) an example of grafting in, [Isaiah chapter 56](#) is proof that non-jews can be grafted into the the “spiritual” Kingdom of Israel, the Kingdom of God. I recommend that you read the whole chapter of [Isaiah 56](#). We do not need permission from any human or government to join the same Kingdom of God that the saved Jews can be in.

<https://www.nehemiaswall.com/how-convert-judaism>

14.13 Can I call myself a Jew once I am grafted in?

We should not use modern methods to define who is or is not a Jew, but instead, we should use the Tanakh (Old Testament) definitions for who is or can become a Jew, or Yehudi.

[Esther 8:17](#) is evidence of non-Jews being grafted in, or joining Jews, to the extent that they were then also called Jews. We are not given any details about what these “people of the land” had to do to become Jewish. There is no evidence of Judaism existing back then. There was no evidence of an “oral Torah” because it wasn't written yet (we have seen no evidence of it until after Jesus was here). I believe the Talmud, and hence “oral” Torah (teaching), was invented in the 100's AD. It was not given by Moses.

So, this means if there was any criteria to become a Jew, it was by doing at least some of the commandments in the Old Testament. Regardless, this verse proves that people could become a Jew without doing anything that Pharisees or other denominations of Judaism might require. I believe it is between God and an individual person to decide if they are doing what is required to be called a Jew.

It is my opinion that a person should not call themselves Jewish unless perhaps they were born with a qualifying percentage (not sure how much really) of blood going back to Abraham, or if they are grafted in by Old Testament methods. Perhaps that even could include Karaite Judaism (which only follows the Hebrew Tanakh).

Orthodox/Halakhic and Conservative Judaism do not generally accept blood tests, and only consider the children of a Jewish mother to be Jewish. This does not follow the Old Testament teachings because in the Old Testament, and woman can be grafted in, and her child mind refuse to believe and obey the Old Testament.

Reformed Judaism also does not generally accept blood tests but will consider a person Jewish if they were born to any

Jew. Having one grandparent that is Jewish, or qualifying Jewish parents is good enough to move to Israel right now, but they do not do blood tests. Again, I believe this is wrong according to the bloodline of Abraham in the Old Testament, and how they were called Hebrews and Jews, and again because mothers might only be grafted in. Even a father could be grafted in and their child might refuse to believe and obey the Old Testament. I am not sure if they would or could be called a Jew then in the Old Testament.

<https://www.merriam-webster.com/dictionary/Jewish>

<https://www.britannica.com/topic/Jew-people>

The Judaism religion does allow non-Jews to “become Jewish” if they agree to certain conditions in Judaism, but I believe that these conditions have little to do with the Old Testament but instead are based on Talmud and other man-made rules.

[Esther 9:27](#) is evidence that not only can people be grafted into Israel, or grafted in enough to call themselves a Jew, it is also evidence that they have the right to practice Jewish holidays. Some Jews might try to force their beliefs on people who are not Jews, preventing them from celebrating Jewish holidays even the Sabbath, but clearly the Old Testament allows grafting in to Israel.

Chapter 15 Worship and Prayer

15.1 Who should we worship?

We should only worship God, Jesus, or God's Spirit. Some denominations and Bible related religions do not believe that Jesus should be worshiped but the Bible makes it clear that he should be. In [Matthew 2:11](#) when the wise men found Jesus it says 'And when they were come into the house, they saw the young child with Mary his mother, and fell down, and worshipped him: and when they had opened their treasures, they presented unto him gifts; gold, and frankincense, and myrrh.' Did they also worship Mary? No they did not.

In [Matthew 14:33](#) when Jesus calmed the sea and got into the boat with his disciples after walking on the water 'Then they that were in the ship came and worshipped him, saying, Of a truth thou art the Son of God.' Jesus did not tell them to stop. Angels usually want to be so humble that they do not even say their names, and they do not allow themselves to be worshipped. Because Jesus was also humble, he would have told them to not worship him if he was not worthy of it. If his disciples worshipped Jesus, shouldnt we also? There are many other places in the Bible that show us that Jesus should be worshipped ([Matthew 28:16-17](#) and other places). As [John chapter 1](#) explains, Jesus was present during the creation of the world. It is clear that Jesus was part of the 'God-head' during the Genesis creation, and then was given flesh later on when he was 'born'.

But what about king David? Some ignorant, unyoked or evil people might take [1 Chronicles 29:20](#) out of context by thinking that Israel worshipped king David here. They clearly didnt because before that in David's speech David clearly gave glory to God and did not boast about himself, nor did he ask the people to bow as far as we know. Not only that, but the verb "to bow the head" from the root ק.נ.ש H6915 is used first,

to further show us that the verb it is paired with is referring to “bowing”. This is often the case in the Bible where two words with similar meanings are paired in a verse in order to act as a checksum (verification) and learning reenforcement for both paired words. In this verse the other paired verb can mean “to bow, worship, revere” כ.פ.ת.ו H7812. It can mean “to bow” and does not always mean “worship”. It is possible that Israel was bowing their heads in respect to king David, but with their mouths and minds they were worshipping God.

15.2 What about saints and Mary?

There are no verses in the Bible that even so much as hint that we should worship Mary, Moses, or any saint. Even the Disciples got tempted to worship Moses and 'Elias' in [Matthew 17:4](#) which says 'Then answered Peter, and said unto Jesus, Lord, it is good for us to be here: if thou wilt, let us make here three tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias.' but in [verse 5 and 6](#) it says 'While he yet spake, behold, a bright cloud overshadowed them: and behold a voice out of the cloud, which said, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased; hear ye him. And when the disciples heard *it*, they fell on their face, and were sore afraid. And Jesus came and touched them, and said, Arise, and be not afraid. And when they had lifted up their eyes, they saw no man, save Jesus only.' I believe that this was God's answer that they should only worship God and Jesus. Moses and Elias were gone, and Jesus never told them to make tabernacles for them. Clearly Moses and Elias are not to be worshipped. If not them, then who could be worthy to qualify? Nobody but Jesus and God.

In [Exodus 34:14](#) it says 'For thou shalt worship no other god: for the LORD, whose name *is* Jealous, *is* a jealous God:' When people worship an idol or another person, they are worshipping a false-god. In order to 'worship' something or somebody, the worshiper first has to see the thing or person they are worshipping as a 'god'. We are commanded to only worship God, and of course we should worship Jesus because

he is part of the 'God-head' with God, and was with God when they created the world, and because the apostles and others worshiped Jesus and Jesus and God allowed it without rebuking anyone. Any exalting of saints or Mary by making shirnes to them or by praying to them is a form of false worship to them. We should not exalt or idolize Mary or any saint.

15.3 Is Jesus equal to God?

Although Jesus is part of the God-head and should be worshiped by us, there is a hierarchy. Jesus himself said the Father is greater in [John 14:28](#) which says 'Ye have heard how I said unto you, I go away, and come *again* unto you. If ye loved me, ye would rejoice, because I said, I go unto the Father: for my Father is greater than I.' Some people might think that this contradicts [Philippians 2:5-11](#) where [verse 6](#) says 'Who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God:' I believe that this refers to the time of creation until Jesus was given flesh when Jesus was with God in Spirit as [John 1:1](#) describes. [Verse 6](#) here could mean that they were one, or it could even be that they were equal but then [verse 7-8](#) could mean that Jesus reduced his own 'rank' when he was humbled and given flesh that could die. [Verse 7-8](#) says 'But made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men: And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross.' So it could be that Jesus used to be equal with God and then he humbled himself into a lower rank with flesh able to die, or it could be that he always had the slightly lower rank but in the beginning the 'equal' part meant that they were one as in being able to do the same things. Notice that in [verse 10](#) it again confirms that we should worship Jesus when it says 'That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of *things* in heaven, and *things* in earth, and *things* under the earth;' Verse 11 hints again to us that the father is greater when it says 'And *that* every tongue

should confess that Jesus Christ *is* Lord, to the glory of God the Father.' If Jesus is to bring glory to the Father, then the father is greater, right?

15.4 Can we also worship with music?

Some denominations believe that it is wrong to worship God with musical instruments. The Bible clearly shows us that we can worship God with instruments with many many verses as examples. Even some of the Psalms imply that they were sang with certain instruments. If you think it is wrong to use musical instruments while worshipping God, I suggest that you use a Bible concordance and look up all of the verses with the words harp, tabret, psaltery, pipe, organ, strings, and etc. Specifically look at [Psalm 33:2](#) which says 'Praise the LORD with harp: sing unto him with the psaltery *and* an instrument of ten strings.'

15.5 What types of worship are there?

I believe that there are many forms of worshipping God. Giving him thanks is one form ([Psalm 100:4](#) and other places), singing with praises is another, and I believe that even working for God to help orphans or widows or needy people can be a form of worship. The Bible even talks about lifting up of hands to worship God in [Psalm 142:2](#) and other places.

15.6 Who should we pray to?

Will dead saints hear our prayers? Could they do anything to help even if they could hear us? I have previously mentioned how people are in a spiritual sleep state when they die in the third chapter of this book. If they cant hear us or do anything for us, then why should we pray to Mary or any other saint or prophet? We should not pray to them. Nowhere in the

Bible tells us to do so. We should only pray to God and Jesus who are the only ones able to help us. We do not need to pray to any living pastor, priest, leader, ruler, or any living or dead person. They can't help us anyway, it would be a waste of time. We can go to God directly now in prayer because of Jesus.

You might want to read all of [1 Timothy chapter 2](#). [1 Timothy 2:5](#) says '*For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus;*' So, again, we should only pray to God and Jesus. Should we pray to spirits or angels? No, because the Bible explains in many places that we should not do that. [1 Chronicles 10:13-14](#) says '*So Saul died for his transgression which he committed against the LORD, even against the word of the LORD, which he kept not, and also for asking counsel of one that had a familiar spirit, to enquire of it; And enquired not of the LORD: therefore he slew him, and turned the kingdom unto David the son of Jesse.*' So not only is it a waste of time to pray to anyone or anything other than God and Jesus, God and Jesus will not be happy if you do so. God is a jealous God, and praying to something or someone other than God or Jesus would basically be like having that other person or thing as a false god.

15.7 Should we repeat our prayers?

[Matthew 6:5-7](#) says '*And when thou prayest, thou shalt not be as the hypocrites are: for they love to pray standing in the synagogues and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly. But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking.*' So here we are told not to repeat our prayers in vain, among other things. It is probably a different situation when a person might be seeking something from God that they really need in their lives, and perhaps ask for it every day or even a few times

a day. That kind of situation is probably ok. But if a person is just reciting memorized prayers over and over again to try and gain some kind of reward, that is a vain repetition.

15.8 Should we use prayer books?

We should pray from our heart, not by a prayer that a person wrote for us to repeat. There are many prayers in the Psalms and other places, and because these prayers are part of the Bible, it is ok for us to use them to pray to God and Jesus with. But we can just pray to God and Jesus from our hearts, we do not have to say a certain thing. [Matthew 6:9-13](#) says 'After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done in earth, as *it is* in heaven. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen.' We can use this to pray to God and Jesus but we don't have to, we can say what is on our minds. These verses are just an example of what we can pray, and some important things we should think about when we pray (because it says "After this manner therefore pray ye". It might even be a good idea to pray this prayer in Matthew every day, but it certainly will not hurt if we say it in our own words or add some things or forget some things.

God does not need ritualistic prayers, he wants us to talk to him like he is our Father, which he really is if we accepted Jesus as the Son of God who died for our sins and was resurrected, and ask Jesus and God to forgive us of our sins. Once we do that we can ask God to be our Father.

15.9 How should we pray?

[Matthew 6:9-13](#) is a good example of how to pray (I recommend that you read the whole chapter), but we can talk to

God like he is our Father, because he is if we are saved. We can say what is on our mind. We should be respectful and if we don't know what to pray about or how to further pray about an issue, we can ask him to tell us what we need to know to pray better for that situation. We might not know right away but if God thinks we need to know, God will tell us. If he thinks we don't need to know, then it is best that we don't know something.

15.10 Should we pray in Jesus name?

This is not told to us in a direct way in the Bible so we only have examples. The Lord's Prayer in [Matthew 6:9-13](#) doesn't suggest Jesus name there. I believe that this is because when we pray to God in secret or in our head, we are already thinking about asking God and Jesus for help, or we are just talking to them, and we have no expectation of doing things in our own power at that time usually. So, while praying in secret or in our head, I am guessing we do not need to pray "in Jesus Name". If this causes stress to you that we do not know for sure by a direct commandment from Jesus, then just keep praying in Jesus name if you want to, it won't hurt anything in my opinion, as long as we don't expect our will to be done just because we say "in Jesus name".

In [Acts chapter 3](#) Peter commanded that a lame man rise up and walk in the name of Jesus Christ of Nazareth. Christ means "anointed one" or "anointed" in Greek, which "Messiah" means the same thing. Both come from the Hebrew word Mashiach מָשִׁיחַ which means "anointed one" or "anointed ruler". In that time it was probably important that the Jews and others who saw the healing of the lame man know exactly which "Joshua" (the name Jesus comes from the Hebrew name Joshua / Yeishua, with Yehoshua being the longer form) he was talking about, so this is probably why Peter mentioned Nazareth and that he was the Messiah. I believe that [Acts chapter 3](#) shows us that if we pray in public out loud while knowing a healing or miracle is going to happen from God and

Jesus, then we should pray in Jesus name, and probably also say that he is the Messiah. I would even say that we should probably always pray in Jesus name if we are in public praying out loud, but there may be exceptions like if we are just with fellow followers of Jesus and we are saying a public prayer to God.

I believe that the whole point, or at least the main point of praying in Jesus name is to witness to others that it is not by our power that things happen, but that God and Jesus are the one that do miracles and answers prayer. In any situation where we might have the option of taking credit for a miracle or answered prayer, we should pray in Jesus name or say that it was done by God and Jesus. Praying in the name of Jesus is not a magic word that we can just snap our fingers and something happens. It is up to God if a person is healed, or if a miracle happens. It is not our power, and it is not because we snapped our fingers saying Jesus name. If God wants to heal a person or do a miracle right when a person prays in Jesus name and snaps their finger, then that is God's choice, but it was still his choice of when and how to do it. Some people might say “well God gave me the gift of healing and anyone I pray for gets healed”. Well, God might have a person in a ministry of healing but at any time God wants to he could stop allowing miracles to happen when a person prays or commands things to happen in Jesus name. Often in Christianity, if a person does not get healed when prayed for, the person they are praying for is blamed for not having enough faith or not forgiving people. It could simply be that God wants to wait for a different time, a perfect time, when everything is arranged how he wants, when more glory will come to himself.

15.11 What about Luke 14:10?

In [Luke 14:10](#), the old English usage of the word “worship” is used. It can mean “a condition of being worthy” among other meanings. The root word here is WOR (or wer?)

which the word WORthy also shares. Not only this, but the most likely Hebrew word that the Greek translators translated the Greek from was H7812 ש.ת.ה or ש.ה.ה. It usually means to “worship” but can mean “to bow”, give “reverence”. For example, it means “bow” in [Genesis 23:7](#). In modern English, the word “worship” is never used in the sense of just bowing or giving respect, at least where I grew up in the western USA.

<https://www.etymonline.com/word/worship>

<https://www.blueletterbible.org/lexicon/h7812/kjv/wlc/0-1/>

We should only worship God and Jesus. I believe it is a sin to worship anyone else, or any idle or false god.

Chapter 16 Bible Bashing

16.1 Zealousness

This one might not be a myth but it is a wide-spread practice among Christianity. It is split to the point where a good portion of Christians do not participate in enthusiastically conversion attempts on other people (Bible Bashing), but there is still a big portion of Christians in many denominations who practice 'Bible Bashing'. They think that they are smart enough, or have the right verses provided by their church leaders, that will open the minds of the fools around them, so they go around arrogantly, or over-confidently spewing out their rehearsed spiel. They don't care if the 'listener' is uninterested, actively disagreeing, or even arguing with them. The Bible Basher thinks that they will eventually win the argument, and their new student will come to their senses. It usually gets to the point where the 'listener' realizes they need to leave, or the argument will go on much longer than they would have wanted. It is usually not the Bible basher who stops the conversation, because they planned to have a full day of 'teaching', and thus they have nothing else to do but to 'teach'.

Sometimes denominations wait for the new 'student' to attend their church one or two times before members of the church start to persuade them. This wouldn't be a problem really but many times this kind of situation ends up being a Bible bashing type of situation, or a situation where it is clear that if you do not accept the denominations pet doctrines, you will not be able to become a member of the church, or at least, not a popular one. Either way, if it is in a church or out on the street, the Bible basher has their verses and their memorized talking points ready. You are at a disadvantage if you do not know the Bible well, and you are unwise if you think you can talk sense into them.

These zealots use verses like [Mark 16:15-16](#) which says

'And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature. He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned.' They take these verses, and they think it is their job to teach every person who will look their way, and if that person will not believe them, then it is that person's fault, and that person is going to hell, or going to receive some kind of punishment.

16.2 Is debating ok?

In [Romans 1:29](#) it says 'Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers,' Here 'debate' is listed with other sins, being right before 'deceit', and right after 'murder' in the list. [Matthew 7:6](#) says 'Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither cast ye your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again and rend you.' Does this mean that some people are like pigs? Perhaps some people are unclean like the Old Testament talks about (That is not a topic for this book), but this verse is not literally saying we should treat people like pigs. It means that if a person is not ready to receive your teaching, then do not try to teach them. In other words, If God has not prepared their hearts to receive your teaching, move on to to teach people who God has prepared. In other words, you need to discern who to teach and who not to teach.

16.3 Who then can convince ignorant people of anything?

In [1 Corinthians 2:13-16](#) there are solid clues that only by God directing you, and by God directing the student, can there be any teaching and learning of the truth. It says 'Which things also we speak, not in the words which man's wisdom teacheth, but which the Holy Ghost teacheth; comparing spiritual things with spiritual. But the natural man receiveth not

the things of the Spirit of God: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know *them*, because they are spiritually discerned. But he that is spiritual judgeth all things, yet he himself is judged of no man. For who hath known the mind of the Lord, that he may instruct him? But we have the mind of Christ.' So we need to know what God wants us to say to people. We need to recognize that we in our own flesh cannot teach anyone the truth (unless if God does a miracle), and that 'students' who are listening with their flesh will not be able to understand or believe it (unless by a miracle from God). So we should ask God to help us to know what to say before we do any teaching.

16.4 What is Spiritual Abuse?

What is Spiritual Abuse and does it exist? Yes it exists but not as often as people want to believe that it does. We now live in a world where most people want to label others as being offenders of something or wrongdoers while saying that they are the victim of something in order to get sympathy, attention, power, or control over or from other people. Some people falsely claim to be victims in order to slander, shame, or manipulate others. We should ask God to show us the truth of every matter, and ask him to give us discernment. We should be careful when trying to decide if a person really is being abused or not.

The definitions online that I saw can be very vague, to the point that anyone holding any religious belief, or anyone who is talking to anyone with any religious belief, could be a supposed abuser. It is subjective, depending on the opinion of the person who claims to be a victim, whether it is true or not. Even the concept and meaning of 'control' can be redefined or twisted. With how widespread and common feminism, critical race theory, victimhood thinking, and other marxist or leftist hate doctrines are, we should be very careful to agree that a person is being abused. These lefty or socialist idealists say you are the one who hates but they are often the one who hates. There is also a widespread and common anti-Christian and

anti-Jew mindset among much of the population. Most of them would agree to almost anything that slanders a christian, or even just any white man in general (due to the white guilt critical race theory narative).

Yes spiritual abuse exists, but it is not as common as we are now being told, and it is not as sinister as we are being told. One example that I believe is spiritual abuse is when a person has an injury or disease that God has not healed yet, so other Christians might tell them that they have sinned or they lack faith and this is why they were not healed yet. It might just be that God has a plan we dont understand and that healing will come at the right time. These abusers in these cases usually believe the myth that they teach that sin or lack of faith can prevent healing. They even sometimes shun these people who have not been healed yet. Should these people be prosecuted by the state? No, this is an issue that should be solved within the Kingdom of God, the true spiritual church. The Bible describes what we should do when a “brother” offends us.

Feminists would use this label and say that a man is spiritually abusing his wife, because they often want to destroy men, and set women into a position to control and lead the marriage, even if she is making it appear as if the man is leading the relationship. Atheist feminists have even additional reasons to use this label of spiritual abuse in order to get Christians prosecuted by the state. It's not just men, if a more traditional woman who is not a feminist disagrees with a feminist activist, the feminist would even label that woman as being the abuser to punish her for not accepting the feminist agenda.

We should seek God's direction in any accusation. It has been common for a long time that all the mainstream media has to do now is accuse a person of a crime or of being abusive and that person is tarnised even if not being found guilty in a court. Their friends, family, coworkers, and others often shun them because of what the media says. This can be similar if a church has an accusation that is not addressed properly.

Chapter 17 Holidays

17.1 Christmas

In [Jeremiah 10:1-4](#) it says 'Hear ye the word which the LORD speaketh unto you, O house of Israel: Thus saith the LORD, Learn not the way of the heathen, and be not dismayed at the signs of heaven; for the heathen are dismayed at them. For the customs of the people *are* vain: for *one* cutteth a tree out of the forest, the work of the hands of the workman, with the axe. They deck it with silver and with gold; they fasten it with nails and with hammers, that it move not.' Many other people have proven the history of christmas and how it has pagan practices in it, but with this verse alone don't you think you should at least stop decorating trees in your house?

Maybe you think these verses no longer matter because Jesus died for our sins. Did God change what he liked and did not like when Jesus died for us? God doesnt change, as [Malachi 3:6](#) says 'For I *am* the LORD, I change not; therefore ye sons of Jacob are not consumed.'. If God would have changed, he would have changed so that his son would not have had to die for us. Think about that.

Did God or Jesus ever tell us to celebrate his birthday? Jesus was already in existance as the word, as [John 1:1](#) tells us 'In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.' I encourage you to read the whole chapter of [John 1](#). Why was the word born into flesh? So that we could worship a newborn baby? He was given flesh so that he could be tested by the devil and to prove to us that he can keep the very commandments he gave us, and then so that he could die for our sins so that we don't have to die for our own sins. This is what we should worship Jesus for, because he died for us, not because he was a baby at one time in the flesh.

When the wise men came, it was probably during the feast of Tabernacles, and they knew that Jesus was to be worshipped because of who he is. They did not give him gifts to

celebrate his birthday. The feast of Tabernacles is a very important 'Old Testament' holiday which is around September or October every year. The time changes because God's calander is different than the Gregorian calander that the world uses now. This means that if you still think we should celebrate the day Jesus was born into flesh, then why do so in December? Just to fit in with everyone esle so that nobody complains about you not celebrating it 'correctly'?

17.2 Birthdays

Why do most Christians ignorantly take on the traditions of the world? Because they want to fit in and be liked. The world wants to be worshiped on their birthdays. They want everyone to bring them gifts, to make or buy them a cake, and praise them for being born and being awesome. Are we supposed to worship other people and give them gifts because they were born? Does it say that we should do this in the Bible? No. Is there anyone in the Bible who was a righteous person and wanted gifts on their birthday? No. Is there even an example of an evil person in the Bible who wanted gifts on their birthday? Not that I know of. Why are we so afraid to be different? Because we don't want to be made fun of? Because we want to be liked by people in the world?

17.3 What other holidays are full of pagan traditions?

If God doesn't want us to learn the ways of the heathen, and then he tells us not to cut and decorate a tree, what other pagan holidays does he want us to avoid? Almost every holiday that is celebrated in the USA has satanic or pagan traditions in them. Many good teachers teach on these pagan and satanic rituals that are in the world holidays. I suggest that you search for some of those teachings. It is probably redundant for me to list out every holiday and show every pagan and satanic thing

about them, when other people who specialize in that topic have done so. I have watched some good videos myself. One of them from the Prophecy Club woke me up to world holidays in 2011. Briefly, I will mention from my memory that Easter has egg coloring because eggs represent fertility and long ago they used to do a blood ritual involving dipped eggs. Halloween has roots with druids who would go door to door to demand a human sacrifice, or many sacrifices, for their rituals. Most world holidays have spacings of 13 days, because 13 is an important number in satanism and some pagan religions.

17.4 Is it worth it all?

Is it worth it to you to spend hundreds or thousands of dollars each year on all of these pagan holidays and birthdays, even when some of these rituals and traditions in them displease God? Don't you think it would better to make a stand to your family, and friends, and coworkers, and others, that you will no longer do holiday rituals and traditions that displease God? Not only will you save money, you will have a new topic to start witnessing with. If we are just like everyone else in the world, is that really living like a Christian should live? Aren't we supposed to be different? [Matthew 5:13](#) says 'Ye are the salt of the earth: but if the salt have lost his savour, wherewith shall it be salted? it is thenceforth good for nothing, but to be cast out, and to be trodden under foot of men.' I do not mention this verse to scare anyone, but if all we do is believe in God, but we still lie, cheat, swear, and practice pagan holidays like everyone else in the world, is that a good thing?

Chapter 18 The Law

18.1 Is this topic for me?

Most people seem to get very passionate and even angry or upset about this topic. Unless you are curious and open-minded to God, I suggest that you skip this topic. Furthermore, sometimes people are not ready to learn a new thing if it causes a lot of chaos in their life, even if the topic is true, and of God. Babies are not born eating meat after all, they need to digest easy things like milk first. I don't mean to imply that anyone who wants to skip this topic, or disagrees with it is a 'baby', but what I am saying is that most people are not ready for the truth of this topic due to the vast amount of things they will then have to 'unlearn', due to all of the non-Biblical doctrine they have inherited.

18.2 Does God change with the wind?

Does God change his mind from one day to the next? I believe that God does get sad or annoyed at some of the things we do, but this is directly because of what we do, not some kind of moodiness that God has. [Psalm 89:34](#) says 'My covenant will I not break, nor alter the thing that is gone out of my lips.' This, along with the verse we read earlier about God not changing, makes it clear to us that God does not change his laws, or have to apologize for anything he says.

18.3 Did Jesus come to remove laws?

Read [John chapter 1](#) if you have not yet. Jesus was with God during the creation week in the beginning. Jesus knew about the Laws of the Old Testament even before he was 'born' into flesh. In [Matthew 5:17](#) Jesus says 'Think not that I am

come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil.' Can something be fulfilled without being destroyed? Sure it can. In fact, who would fulfil something and then destroy their previous work they did? Who would finish building a building and then destroy it as soon as it was done? Who would make plans for an event and as soon as the event happens would destroy the plans?

If the Old Testament laws were 'done away with' at the cross, why did Jesus even bother to tell us to obey the ten commandments, or love one another, or to love God? If Jesus could do away with laws, why not do away with all of them and let us do what we want? Well, that is what the satanist motto is 'do what you want'. Sin means to disobey God. Why didn't Jesus just do away with the Old Testament laws that required us to die for our sins so that he didn't have to die for us to save us? Because that would make Jesus seem weak and satan would accuse him of changing it so that Jesus didn't have to die. If God can be disobeyed, then that means God is asking us to do or to not do certain things, right? If God doesn't change what he says, then that means he hasn't changed what he asked us to do.

It is [Romans 10:4](#) which says 'For Christ *is* the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believeth.', and verses like it, that people take out of context to say that the law is done away with. Just like in English how something can be finished, like when people finish building a house, the builders can also end their building of the house. When the builders end their building of the house, does the house disappear? No. This verse in Romans means that Jesus 'fulfilled' the law, just like we saw in the verse from Matthew. Translators can use the words end and finish interchangeably. What this verse does do though is it hints to us that Jesus did indeed change things, but he did not remove or destroy the law. This verse means that Jesus finished the law so that we can now go to him to be declared righteous by asking him to forgive our sins.

The law is still used to see who sins or not. The law did not disappear. The law was the preferences and desires that God had for us to be doing. Do the preferences and desires of

God change? This verse in Romans is hinting about the sacrifice that Jesus made for us, and how we can now be forgiven by him without an animal sacrifice, and maybe even our ignorance about the law can be covered until a future time when we hear God about the fulness of the law now with Christ.

We need to remember to read entire chapters of the Bible instead of just taking one verse out of context. I believe that when Jesus saves a person, and the person becomes born again, Jesus is more concerned about the well being of the person, and the immediate needs in their lives, and the immediate things they are disobeying, than the obeying of Old Testament laws such as not shaving a beard, or not having a tattoo (body cuttings), and so forth. This does not mean that Jesus no longer cares if people get tattooed or shave their face, I believe it just means that Jesus weighs things and addresses the most important things in a persons life at the time.

Jesus does not want to overwhelm us and force us to obey all of the Old Testament law on the same day we are born again. We may not even mature enough to get to the point where he can lead us into to the fulness of his law, but that does not mean he destroyed his law, or wants to. Another way to think of what [Romans 10:4](#) is saying, is that Jesus completed the Law, in other words, he added the last bits to it that were needed ever since Adam and Eve sinned.

[Galations 3:23-3:25](#) is another of the many verses that many people use to say that the law is done away with. [Verses 23-25](#) says 'But before faith came, we were kept under the law, shut up unto the faith which should afterwards be revealed. Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster *to bring us* unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith. But after that faith is come, we are no longer under a schoolmaster.' This does not mean that the law no longer applies to us, I believe what it means is that Jesus is our schoolmaster. It just so happens that Jesus upheld the Old Testament laws. Jesus was a Jew after all (but not a pharisee or saducee, more like a Karaite). In my book 'What is Truth?' I have show proof of how Jesus was a Jew, if you are curious to read it. Because Jesus upheld the Old

Testament laws, and is now our schoolmaster, then the law still applies to us, but Jesus is the middleman between us and the law. Would Jesus uphold the Old Testament laws but then tell us that we don't have to?

I suggest that you read all of Romans chapter 3. In [Romans 3:31](#) it says 'Do we then make void the law through faith? God forbid: yea, we establish the law.' Does the Bible contradict itself? If you think a verse in the Bible says that the law is done away with, then you are misunderstanding or misinterpreting the Bible. How much more clear can this verse in [Romans 3:31](#) be? I suggest that you read all of [Colossians chapter 2](#) in order to have the proper context for the next verse I will mention. In [Colossians 2:14](#) it says 'Blotting out the handwriting of ordinances that was against us, which was contrary to us, and took it out of the way, nailing it to his cross;' This does not mean that the law was nailed to the cross, what this means is that your sins were nailed to the cross with Jesus (if you ask him to forgive you). It would be as if a judge wrote on a piece of paper a list of things you did wrong, and then Jesus destroyed that list that was handwritten by the judge. Jesus didn't literally destroy the laws that the judge used, but he destroyed the list that said what you did wrong. That is how I see this verse describing this topic to us.

[Romans 14](#) is another popular chapter that people use to say that the law is done away with. In [Romans 14:5](#) it says 'One man esteemeth one day above another: another esteemeth every day *alike*. Let every man be fully persuaded in his own mind.' So does this mean that the law does not matter for people who think the law is done away with? Simply thinking that reality is different than it really is, does not change reality. However, if somebody does not know that they are disobeying God, it is certainly in a different category than somebody who does know that they are disobeying God but they continue to do so. Ignorance does not erase the sin, but it is a different situation.

Like I said before, God may need to work on things in the person's life that are directly threatening their lives or their health, or their mental well-being, and I believe that God would

want to fix these immediate needs first, before teaching a person that the Law is not done away with. For example, if a person is getting drunk every night or chain smoking and they are getting very sick, what is the point of teaching this person about the Law when they are nearly killing themselves with addictive substances? God knows what steps we need to take in our lives, and in what order, and he knows that we cannot handle a bunch of things at once. I think this is what this verse is talking about.

[Galations 3](#) is another chapter that many people use to say that the Law is done away with, In [Galations 3:10](#) it says 'For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed *is* every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them.' What I believe this means is that nobody can obey all of the law (other than Jesus), and so therefore we have always needed Jesus, ever since Adam sinned. We can only be forgiven by Jesus or God because of Jesus, but this does not mean that the law does not matter. This verse is not saying that the law is done away with, it just means that anyone who sins (and does not ask Jesus for forgiveness) will be cursed (punished might be a better word). Most people like to twist verses out of context to make it fit their belief. We need to be carefull what we assume.

In [1 Samuel 4](#) is a lesson to us about assuming what God will do. We should never assume what God will do. Israel assumed that if they had the ark of the covenant with them in their camp, the phillistines could not defeat them. The Phillistines did defeat them, and they took the ark from Israel. If they did not make this assumption, Israel might have been able to flee with the ark and regather their troops to later win. If we should not assume what the will of God is, then why should we assume what his word says, when it does not literally say what we want it to say?

[Luke 16:17](#) says "And it is easier for heaven and earth to pass, than one tittle of the law to fail." This shows me that no Old Testament law can be removed (fail), but they can be "fulfilled" like how Jesus is now the only sin

sacrifice we need, because the sin sacrifices of the OT were symbolic of the death sacrifice that Jesus would, and did do for us. Like how those sin sacrifice laws did not fail and were not removed, no law can be removed from the OT.

18.4 What did Jesus change?

In [Matthew 27:49-50](#) it says 'Jesus, when he had cried again with a loud voice, yielded up the ghost. And, behold, the veil of the temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom; and the earth did quake, and the rocks rent;' The very first thing that Matthew says that happened was this veil of the temple being torn in two. This is the most important part of [verse 50](#). I believe that this is the inner veil that separated everyone but the high priest from the 'Holy of Holies', which was where the ark of the covenant was kept, where it is believed that God himself sat on. The KJV calls the lid of the ark the 'Mercy seat'.

[1 Samuel 4:4](#) says 'So the people sent to Shiloh, that they might bring from thence the ark of the covenant of the LORD of hosts, which dwelleth *between* the cherubims: and the two sons of Eli, Hophni and Phinehas, *were* there with the ark of the covenant of God.' Did you see that? The KJV hints that God might actually be sitting on the Mercy seat, the lid of the ark. This is because the Hebrew word כּוּסֵא' that KJV translates as 'dwelleth' can and often does mean 'to sit' also. In the Hebrew this verse literally hints that not only does the covenant dwell in the ark, but that God might be sitting on the seat at times.

[Hebrews 9:7](#) says 'But into the second *went* the high priest alone once every year, not without blood, which he offered for himself, and *for* the errors of the people:' This means that the High Priest only went into the Holy of Holies once per year, and that sin sacrifices had to be made first. Jesus offered himself to be sacrificed for our sins, so now we can enter the 'Holy of holies' which was in the inner-most veil. Please read all of [Hebrews chapter 9](#) if you have not done so before.

If you have not watched or heard Ron Wyatt's testimony

of how he found the ark of the covenant, and how he saw Jesus's blood on the Mercy seat of it, and how he had the blood tested, and how it showed that there were only 23 chromosomes when there was supposed to be 46 like all other humans, then you should watch his videos. Anyway, I believe that when Jesus died on the cross (the ark was in a cave below the cross), the earthquake opened up a small crack in the ground, so that Jesus blood went onto the Mercy Seat. I believe that this is what caused the veil to be torn, Jesus blood dripping onto the mercy seat. Previously, it was the blood of a specially selected bull that was sprinkled onto the mercy seat ([Leviticus 16:14](#)), which was symbolic of Jesus's blood that would be shed so that we could be forgiven. The bull sacrifices would have meant nothing if Jesus did not die for us.

https://www.ronwyatt.com/new_written_account.html

Anyway, the veil being rent, and Jesus being our High Priest (my understanding of [Hebrews 9](#) and [Hebrews 6:19-20](#)), means that we can go to God in prayer at any time, and we can be forgiven when we ask, at any time. We no longer have to wait for one day out of the whole year to go to God for forgiveness and tell him our needs and desires. We can ask God anytime now because of what Jesus did. So Jesus did not destroy the Laws concerning the blood sacrifices of animals, or the veil, but instead, Jesus completed the Law, so that we no longer have to sacrifice animals in order to be forgiven, and in order to talk to God.

Again, If Jesus could have just erased the Law, then he would have erased it and changed it so that he did not have to die for us. Jesus was so stressed he said in [Luke 22:42](#) 'Saying, Father, if thou be willing, remove this cup from me: nevertheless not my will, but thine, be done.' and then blood seemingly was mixed in his sweat ([Luke 22:44](#)). Don't you think God would have made it easier on Jesus if he could just change the law to whatever he wanted to? God can do anything, but God will never choose to be a liar or a hypocrite. If God were to change the law just to keep Jesus from suffering, then satan would have accused God of being a hypocrite, and all of the angels would have seen it. Because

God wants to be good and perfect, he could not change his law just to make it easier on Jesus. Then why do people still think the Old Testament Law was done away with? Because they have not studied these topics for themselves, they just believe the myths that they hear repeated over and over again. As the saying goes that satan likes to go by, 'If you tell a lie big enough and keep repeating it, people will eventually come to believe it.'

I recommend that you read all of [Hebrews 10](#), where in [Hebrews 10:19](#) it says 'Having therefore, brethren, boldness to enter into the holiest by the blood of Jesus,' This means we no longer need an earthly High priest to mediate to God for us, we can go to God directly with our own prayer, worship, and concerns, thanks to Jesus. [Hebrews 10:11-12](#) says 'And every priest standeth daily ministering and offering oftentimes the same sacrifices, which can never take away sins: But this man, after he had offered one sacrifice for sins for ever, sat down on the right hand of God;' This verse tells us that there will never need to be a sin sacrifice ever again, because Jesus did the only and last sin sacrifice for us that really paid the price that we owed.

The other main difference now is the complete immersion in water that symbolized the death and resurrection of Jesus for us. [Romans 6](#) is a good chapter to read about baptism. There were symbolic baptisms in the Old Testament, Baptism is not a new concept. God brought Noah through the flood on top of the waters and then rested them on dry land, into a new life. When God brought Israel out of Egypt, he brought them through the Red Sea, on dry land. This represented a baptism into a new way of life they were going to walk into. Then, When Joshua led Israel into Canaan to take the land of Israel that God promise his people, God brought them through the Jordan river, once again on dry ground. Once again, this was the start of a new phase in their lives. I believe that baptism was and is meant to be a symbolic thing that was to be done for those of us who truly follow God, to show that we are going to follow God into his will in the future. The main difference now, is that instead of us going over floods or

through rivers or seas, we can participate in baptisms in a river to show our faith in Jesus. If Jesus came to destroy the law, he would have never had John the baptist perform baptisms, because baptisms were already established in the Old Testament by the ways I already mentioned. [1 Corinthians 10:1-2](#) says 'Moreover, brethren, I would not that ye should be ignorant, how that all our fathers were under the cloud, and all passed through the sea; And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea;'

18.5 Did God's Spirit move in the Old Testament?

Did the Spirit of God only move in the New Testament? Did the Spirit of God only start to move on the famous day of Pentecost in Acts? In [1 Samuel 16:13-14](#) it says 'Then Samuel took the horn of oil, and anointed him in the midst of his brethren: and the Spirit of the LORD came upon David from that day forward. So Samuel rose up, and went to Ramah. But the Spirit of the LORD departed from Saul, and an evil spirit from the LORD troubled him.' Here we can see that not only did the Spirit of God come upon David, the Spirit of God left Saul, meaning that the Spirit of God used to be with Saul.

Saul even prophesied back in [1 Samuel 10:10](#) by the moving of God's Spirit. [Numbers 27:18](#) says 'And the LORD said unto Moses, Take thee Joshua the son of Nun, a man in whom *is* the spirit, and lay thine hand upon him;' It seems that even Joshua had the Spirit of God in him. [Exodus chapter 31](#) is another example of God's spirit filling Bezaleel so that he could do God's work on the Tabernacle. Clearly Pentecost was not the beginning of God's Spirit moving on people or influencing people. Perhaps the only difference is how often it happens, and God's Spirit can move within us easier now because we can be forgiven easier, without having to sacrifice animals. So, in other words we can be clean vessels easier now for the Spirit of God to move in us.

18.6 Did miracles happen in the Old Testament?

Miracles were not a new thing to happen once Jesus came here in the flesh. Many miracles, or maybe I should say wonders happened in Egypt with the 10 plagues before Israel was let go. Many miracles happened in the wilderness for Israel, including the Manna from heaven and the water from the rock. Joshua crossed on dry land over the Jordan river. The walls of Jericho fell. The sun and moon stood still for Joshua ([Joshua 10:13](#)). King Jeroboam's hand dried up ([1 King 13:4](#)) and then his hand was later restored ([verse 6](#)). Many wonders happened with Elijah and Elisha. Daniel and his friends in the fiery furnace but unharmed, and much more that I did not mention.

One of the reasons why Jesus did so many miracles, other than the fact that he loves us a lot, is to fulfill [Malachi 4:2](#) which says 'But unto you that fear my name shall the Sun of righteousness arise with healing in his wings; and ye shall go forth, and grow up as calves of the stall.' Healing was to be part of the sign of Jesus's first coming to us. This part about 'healing in his wings' could refer to [Matthew 9:20-22](#) where that woman was healed because of her faith when touching the hem of his garment.

<http://www.bible-history.com/old-testament/miracles.html>

18.7 Is it judaizing to keep the Law?

Is there any harm in keeping Old Testament laws if a person feels that God wants them to? Then why all of the fuss about 'the law being done away with'? Because there are some people who feel it is their duty to make other people obey the Old Testament laws (which is wrong, as in, Bible-bashing is wrong). Also some pastors and church leaders do not want to

lose church members who might quit attending their church if they start to realize the truth about the Old Testament laws. I am not saying that all pastors who say that the law is done away with is evil or malicious, but most of them are ignorant or afraid to defy their denomination leaders. Is it 'Judaizing' to keep the law? Yes, if it means obeying the Judaism doctrines, because many of the beliefs and doctrines in Judaism are not actually found in the Bible, but they are in man-made writings within Judaism. Simply keeping or obeying the Old Testament laws that are in the 66 book Bible is not Judaizing. This is because Judaism does not have a monopoly or control over the Old Testament, it is not theirs to say who can or will obey the Old Testament Laws. Some people among Judaism do indeed think that they own the rights to control who can obey the Old Testament Laws, and this is wrong of them. People like that often refer to 'Noahide laws' which I have described in my book 'What is Truth?'

18.8 Do I need to keep the Law to be saved? (saved by works?)

This is a complicated question. For example, we have to ask God to forgive us for our sins against him and Jesus, in order to be forgiven. That first takes faith that God and Jesus can save us, and then works, in the form of us taking the action of asking to be forgiven. If we want to ask God to be our father, so that we can start a relationship with him and Jesus, then that also takes faith and works in the form of asking God for that. Now is it hard to ask God for forgiveness and to be his child? It could barely be considered a work because it is easy and can be done in seconds.

Is there anything else that is required that we do to be saved now? Not that I know of, because even one of the sinners on the cross was told by Jesus that he would see him in paradise, and there was no way for the sinner to be baptized on the cross before he died was there? I suggest that you read

[Luke 23](#) where it says about this sinner in [Luke 23:42-43](#) 'And he said unto Jesus, Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom. And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, To day shalt thou be with me in paradise.' Was there time for this sinner to start keeping the Old Testament law? Did he have time to make sure the Ten Commandments were on his doorpost? Did he have time to wear the proper fringes on his clothing? The list goes on. Clearly the man did not really have time to start keeping the Law or get baptized, but yet Jesus said he would be in paradise that day. So once we do ask God and/or Jesus to forgive us of our sins, and we ask God to be our father, we can be saved just by that alone.

If God asks us to do something further like obey his Old Testament Law, or get Baptized, then of course we should obey God, and yes those would be works that we would be doing because of our faith, but those further works would not be what saved us. Now If we are a forgiven child of God, and then we leave him to go be a sinner again, constantly sinning and not repenting, then yes we may be able to loose our salvation. That is a different topic which I already covered.

[James chapter 2](#) might be a good read for you, it tells me that if we have faith without works then it is dead faith. For example, I believe that if we really love God and Jesus and their word, then we will obey them ([John 14:15](#)), and this obedience alone will produce works. For example, loving our neighbors would eventually produce real works if we say something nice to them, etc. This whole topic about works should be a non-issue, because we should want to feed those who lack food, and clothe those who lack clothing, etc, and those are works. We should do works just because we love God and Jesus and the Bible, not because we want rewards, and I am not saying rewards are bad either. Once we become forgiven and a child of God, we should not just sit in a pew once a week and do absolutely no good works in our life from then on because we are saved and 'nothing else matters'. Perhaps even changing how we think, like avoiding negative thoughts and trying to have faith in the Bible, could be considered works. 'Works' do not necessarily have to be

difficult things, or things that take more than mere seconds.

18.9 Should we go to church on sundays?

Most Christians think the Lord's day is on Sunday. Sunday is actually the first day of the week, just look at a few calendars. Most calendars have Sunday correctly as the first day of the week. However there are some myth believers who have made some calendars with Sunday as the seventh (last) day of the week. Also, even the Spanish language calls Saturday Sabado, which is from the word Sabbath, which in Hebrew means rest, or time of rest. So, if we want to honor the day of rest in the Ten Commandments, we really should rest on Saturday, and not work.

In fact, it seems that the 'Mark of the Beast' will not only be a computer chip with the number 666 in it digitally, implanted in people's right hand or forehead ([Revelation 13:16-18](#)), but the beast will also force people to work on the Sabbath day (Saturday, the seventh day) in order to make them break God's commandments. Along with being a physical mark, the mark of the beast is probably going to be the ideology of satan also. In 2018 and now even in 2019, some banks and online financial institutions have closed the accounts of customers who have beliefs that oppose the beliefs of their corporation leaders. This means that many Christians, conservatives, gun owners, and others are increasingly being singled out by these corporations and essentially put on 'black lists' where their ability to conduct business is reduced. These kinds of blacklistings are probably a precursor to the mark of the beast being required to be able to do anything with money. Some people claim that a vaccine can be the Mark of the Beast, but it would have to be injected into the right hand or forehead in my opinion, which seems extremely unlikely that they would do that. I do not know of any vaccine that exists that does not have some form of toxin, chemical, or unhealthy compound in them.

They could also have nano-particals that could also be digitized with the number 666, among other uses like data transmission and detection.

Do we even have to go to church one day each week? No, there are no verses saying we have to attend a church on a certain day every week of the year. Many people take [Hebrews 10:25](#) which says 'Not forsaking the assembling of ourselves together, as the manner of some *is*; but exhorting *one another*: and so much the more, as ye see the day approaching.' and they then twist this to say it is a sin to miss church on sundays. This verse does not say when we must gather, to assume any time is foolish. [Exodus 34:23](#) says 'Thrice in the year shall all your men children appear before the Lord GOD, the God of Israel.' These three times that we must gather are actually three seasons, which contain Seven Bible holidays. Three of them are in the first month, Pentacost is in the middle, and three of them are in the seventh month. [Leviticus chapter 23](#) tells us these holidays which are: Passover, Unleaven Bread, Firstfruits, Pentacost, Day of Shouting, Day of Atonement, and Tabernacles. These holidays are the only times we are required to gather together, but it certainly does not hurt to meet every week if we want to. We just need to be aware of what we are required to do, and what we are not required to do, so that we do not burn ourselves out, or make ourselves feel guilty or bound to man-made religious laws.

18.10 Should we still stone people?

I recommend that you read the [8th chapter of John](#). In it, the Scribes and Pharisees brought a woman to Jesus who was supposedly taken in adultery. They asked him if he thought that she should be stoned. In [verse 7](#) it says 'So when they continued asking him, he lifted up himself, and said unto them, He that is without sin among you, let him first cast a stone at her.' Does this mean that Jesus has done away with the law? In [verse 10-11](#) it says 'When Jesus had lifted up himself, and saw none but the woman, he said unto her, Woman, where are those

thine accusers? hath no man condemned thee? She said, No man, Lord. And Jesus said unto her, Neither do I condemn thee: go, and sin no more.' Why would Jesus say this?

Deuteronomy 17:5-6 says 'Then shalt thou bring forth that man or that woman, which have committed that wicked thing, unto thy gates, *even* that man or that woman, and shalt stone them with stones, till they die. At the mouth of two witnesses, or three witnesses, shall he that is worthy of death be put to death; *but* at the mouth of one witness he shall not be put to death.' The key point here is that there has to be two or more witnesses to the sinful act. **Verse 7** says 'The hands of the witnesses shall be first upon him to put him to death, and afterward the hands of all the people. So thou shalt put the evil away from among you.' This means that the witnesses have to be the first ones to stone the sinner who was caught. All of this means that the reason why Jesus did not want the woman stoned, was because there were no witnesses left there who were accusing her (look at **John 8:11** again if you need to).

So, does this mean that we should still stone people who were caught in the act of adultery and other sins by two or more witnesses? Most countries in the world would consider an act of stoning in this manner as an act of murder, so it would probably have to be left to a state like Israel to reinstate laws that support stoning according to the Bible, if that is what Israel, or other nations would want to do. I am not suggesting that countries start stoning people again, but our civil laws are so different now they don't even require two witnesses to convict somebody in most cases that I am aware of. Stoning should never be implemented again unless the laws about two witnesses are used also, and perhaps only in a legal autonomous zone. But even then, more might need to be done in society before it could be considered acceptable. I really doubt there will ever be a country again that can achieve the reinstatement of stoning like it was in the Bible. I learned this stoning topic from the youtuber called 'Rise On Fire'. His video is linked below. He explains this topic very well.

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=IWESVoAEIHA>

18.11 Did God replace or divorce Israel?

There is a myth floating around known as the replacement, succession, or divorcement theory where people think that God forsook Israel and divorced them and even ended his covenant with them. There are many things in the Bible and even modern events that show this isn't true. The many miracles of how God brought Jews back to Israel and defending them against the many Arab attacks in recent times is one major example. Just because they have a secular government does not mean that God uses it to bring Jews back into the land that belongs to them. Also [Romans 11](#) is one of the many proofs that God did not forsake the Jews. If a teacher is still teaching this replacement theory, they either didn't ask God to show them the truth, don't care about the truth, or they are blinded for some reason, because the Bible has so many proofs and examples that show that God did not divorce or forsake Israel.

18.12 Modesty

In [1 Timothy 2:9](#) it says "In like manner also, that women adorn themselves in modest apparel, with shamefacedness and sobriety; not with broided hair, or gold, or pearls, or costly array;" This verse seems to be about public appearances of women, which becomes more clear if you read further on in the verses after this verse. So, for example, it would be just fine for a wife to braid her hair if it is just the husband and wife alone together at their home.

18.13 Hair

In [1 Corinthians 11:14-15](#) it says "Doth not

even nature itself teach you, that, if a man have long hair, it is a shame unto him? But if a woman have long hair, it is a glory to her: for *her* hair is given her for a covering.” For men, one exception might be with having long hair from a nazirite vow ([Numbers 6:5](#)).

For men, [Leviticus 21:5](#) says “They shall not make baldness upon their head, neither shall they shave off the corner of their beard, nor make any cuttings in their flesh.”

Chapter 19 Trinity

19.1 Should you read this chapter?

If you are not rock solid in your faith that the Bible is true, accurate, and error free, then perhaps you should not read this chapter. You should read my book 'What is Truth?', or other books that build up your faith about the Bible before you read this chapter.

19.2 Is there any mention of the trinity in the Old Testament?

There is not. People that believe the myth that there are 3 persons in the God-head do use verses when the Spirit of God moved in the Old Testament to prove that it is a third person, however, that is no proof at all of a 3rd person. What those verses do prove, is that the Spirit of God moved in the Old Testament. That is something I agree with. We should also know from the first chapter of [John](#) that Jesus was there with God during the creation week. If you have not read the first chapter of [John](#) yet, please do so.

19.3 Who is the Spirit of God?

The Spirit of God, is simply God's spirit. Just like you have a spirit and a body, God has a Spirit and a body. Was Adam made in the image of God? And God made Adam a fleshly body and then put a spirit in Adam? That is proof that God has two parts, because Adam has two parts, and Adam was in the image of God. Do you think that God would say he made Adam in his own image if Adam looked a lot different ([Genesis 1:27](#))? God means what he says. Read the first and Second

chapter of [Genesis](#) if you have not done so before.

I believe that because of the Roman Catholic Church doctrines about the trinity, this greatly helped to cause the myth of the trinity to spread into Christianity. I believe that some people think that God cannot have a body and a spirit, and so they think that if the Spirit of God is mentioned, it must be a third mysterious person of the “trinity”.

The Spirit of God in the Old Testament could also sometimes be Jesus acting in his spirit, as he may have not been given a fleshly body until he was 'born' into flesh in the New Testament era. The word 'God' in the Hebrew of the Old Testament is a plural word, which could include Jesus. Two is plural, right? The word 'God' in Hebrew being plural is not proof of 3 persons existing. What about when the Bible uses the words 'Holy Spirit'? Isn't that proof of a 3rd person? No, it is just another way of saying the Spirit of God. Isn't God's Spirit also Holy? Calling God's Spirit 'Holy' does not mean it is a different person than God.

19.4 What are the names of the 3 persons?

One further proof that there are only 2 people in the God-head, is that we know the names of God and his son. By the way, the word God is not a name, it is a title, just like calling somebody by the title of 'Judge' or 'Officer'. The name of God and his son are in Hebrew, and both of them are written in the Old Testament. The name of God is Yehovah (KJV translates God's name as Jehovah because the 'j' in English used to have a 'y' sound). The name of Jesus is Yehoshua in Hebrew. His shorter name which is also used is Yeshua. Jesus is the Greek form of his name that was transliterated into English from Greek. I explain more about the names of Yehoshua and Yehovah in my book 'What is Truth?', or you can also look for Nehemia Gordon's books that cover the topic of the name of God and Jesus. Why then do we not know the

name of the 3rd person if indeed the 3rd person exists? Because there is no 3rd person.

19.5 What do the parables say about the 3rd person?

Nothing. For example, the parable of the wayward son is about a father and son, they can also show us how God, our father can forgive us and love us even if we leave him and come back to him. Is there any entity in that parable that would represent a third entity?

19.6 What about those 2 trinity verses?

There are only 2 verses that remotely have a chance at 'proving' the existence of a 3rd person of the God-head, let's look at them. [Matthew 28:19](#) is one of the main verses that are used to 'prove' that the God-head has 3 persons in it. It says 'Go ye therefore, and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost:' In the Shem Tov version of the Hebrew manuscripts of Matthew, this verse only says 'Go ye'. Also, why would the Bible tells us to baptize somebody using the name of the Holy 'Ghost' when we don't even know the actual name of the Holy 'Ghost'? The fact that we have never been told what the name of the 3rd person is, is proof that this verse cannot be the original verse, because this verse would not require us to use a name we cannot know.

[2 Corinthians 13:14](#) is very ironic, because just like [Matthew 28:19](#), it is at the end of the book. Is it a coincidence that these two verses that mention 'all three' persons of the God-head are at the end of the books and chapters that they are in? Not at all. [2 Corinthians 13:14](#) says 'The grace of the Lord Jesus Christ, and the love of God, and the communion of the Holy Ghost, *be* with you all. Amen.' Ghost is just another way of saying Spirit, Ghost is even used in the Old Testament like when Abraham died and gave up his 'ghost', or spirit. This

verse indeed is the only possible verse left in the Bible that could 'prove' that there is a 3rd person of the God-head, but I feel that this verse is mentioning both Jesus and his Father, God, and they give a second attribute about the Spirit of God, which is needed for Christians to be able to fellowship with one another. In other words, 'communion of the Holy Ghost' could just mean 'Communion of God's Spirit'. It is not 'proof' of a third entity.

If there really were 3 persons in the God-head, don't you think we would know the name of all three of them? And don't you think that there would be many many more verses that specifically prove that there is a 3rd unique person? All we have left as 'proof' is possibly one verse, but that verse may just be listing two attributes of God, and one attribute of Jesus.

In my experience, God gives us second witnesses of important things we need to know in the Bible. Sometimes God repeats himself many times in the Bible to make sure we understand something. Every major topic in the Bible is repeated and has second or third witnesses backing them up, but this topic only has 1 verse, if even that. This is why we have four copies of what happened by four different disciples who witnessed what Jesus did. The topics related to Jesus coming in the flesh and dying for us and being resurrected were so important, God wanted us to have 4 books about the same topics.

If the trinity is true, why do we have no proof of there being 3 persons? There should be so many verses that prove a trinity if it were true, but all myth believers can do is stretch verses and assume things in them, there is no solid proof.

19.7 What is blaspheming the Holy Spirit?

On the back of the trinity myth, is the myth of the 'unpardonable sin'. The basis of the myth is in [Matthew 12:31-33](#) which says 'Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of sin and

blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men: but the blasphemy *against* the *Holy* Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men. And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the *world* to come. Either make the tree good, and his fruit good; or else make the tree corrupt, and his fruit corrupt: for the tree is known by *his* fruit.' [Verse 33](#) is not really used by myth believers but I included it for context, because it gives us a hint that this verse is possibly connected with something that happened in the Old Testament.

[Mark 3:28-30](#) is Mark's account of what Jesus said, and then in [verse 30](#) it says 'Because they said, He hath an unclean spirit.' This verse is the second clue about the context of what Jesus said about this. Both clue verses are about discernment, [Matthew 12:33](#) is Jesus telling us how to properly discern, and [Mark 3:30](#) is the scribes falsly 'discerning' about Jesus. [Luke 12:10-12](#) covers the same topic that Jesus talked about, and in [verse 11 and 12](#) we have another clue when it says 'And when they bring you unto the synagogues, and *unto* magistrates, and powers, take ye no thought how or what thing ye shall answer, or what ye shall say: For the Holy Ghost shall teach you in the same hour what ye ought to say.' The clue in these verses in Luke is also about discernment, in the sense of judges who will decide what to do about a person.

Instead of me explaining what this verse means right now, let's first look at what happened in the New and Old Testaments that I think these verses are talking about. In [Acts 5:1-11](#) (you should read all of it) a man and his wife sold a possession and kept some of the money for themselves, while giving a portion to the apostles. Peter realized they lied about it and [verse 3](#) says 'But Peter said, Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine heart to lie to the Holy Ghost, and to keep back *part* of the price of the land?' The man died in [verse 5](#), then three hours later in [verse 8-10](#) peter asked the man's wife who was not aware that her husband died 'And Peter answered unto her, Tell me whether ye sold the land for so much? And she said, Yea,

for so much. Then Peter said unto her, How is it that ye have agreed together to tempt the Spirit of the Lord? behold, the feet of them which have buried thy husband *are* at the door, and shall carry thee out. Then fell she down straightway at his feet, and yielded up the ghost: and the young men came in, and found her dead, and, carrying *her* forth, buried *her* by her husband.' So both this man and his wife knowingly lied to God, while they were being judged by Peter about the matter.

In [Numbers 5:11-31](#) we are told that if a man thinks his wife may have cheated on him with another man, then he can bring his wife to the priest, and then the priest will bring her before God. And then she will agree that if she was with another man carnally, then she will get a curse of a swelling belly and a rotting thigh. It was a test before God so that the husband would either no longer have a need to be jealous, or at least he would then know if she cheated on him or not. This situation with the priest reminded me of the situation with Peter in [Acts 5](#).

I do feel that people who are guilty of blaspheming the Spirit of God are people that either God kills immediately after they do it, or he allows them to live, but they would have never repented again anyway, so this is why the verses seem to say that they will not be forgiven. In other words, the reason why they will not be forgiven, is because their hearts are so hard and ignorant that they will never again ask for forgiveness.

It turns out, that two of the four times that the word blaspheme is found in the KJV Old Testament, it ends up being the Hebrew word פָּרַז H5006 which is usually translated as 'to despise' or 'despise'. This is a clue that perhaps all that 'blaspheming' the Spirit of God is, is to despise God, which would end up meaning they would not ask for forgiveness anyway, so maybe that is why their sins would not be forgiven.

19.8 Is Jesus God?

Yes ([John 1:1](#)). Is Jesus at the same rank with God? It seems that no, he is not, because Jesus said that the father is greater than himself ([John 14:28](#)).

19.9 What power and authority does Jesus have?

The history of Joseph in the Bible has many prophecies and comparisons with Jesus. I believe that when Joseph was taken out of the prison that he was in for being falsely accused, and then pardoned, this is an example of the resurrection of Jesus. When Pharaoh (who was just a sinful human) gave Joseph power and authority over all of Pharaoh's people, this is a comparison that shows us that Jesus has power and authority over the universe, and only God is above him in rank, like how Pharaoh says that “only in the throne will I be greater than thou” ([Genesis 41:40](#)).

19.10 Is it ok to bow to Jesus?

Yes, all of Joseph's brothers bowed to him and said that they are the servants of Joseph ([Genesis 50:18](#)). [Philippians 2:10-11](#) tells us that “That at the name of Jesus every knee should bow, of *things* in heaven, and *things* in earth, and *things* under the earth; And *that* every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ *is* Lord, to the glory of God the Father.” I believe that this last part is another hint that God has higher rank, the rank of the throne.

19.11 Should we worship Jesus?

Yes, the apostles worshipped Jesus in [Luke 24:52](#) and [Matthew 14:33](#), and probably other places.

19.12 What term should I use for the “God-head”?

Perhaps Binitarian is the best term, because Bi means two.

19.13 God is our Father, so is Jesus our brother?

This could be true that in a sense Jesus is our older firstborn brother once we are saved, but he is still part of the “God-head”. The Joseph prophesy about Jesus is one example, how his brothers bowed to him, and [Matthew 12:47-50](#) is another. However, this Matthew example is probably just meaning that we become family with Jesus and God when we are born again.

Many verses in the new testament have parables about the church being the bride, and so this once again supports the family concept in general, and not so much Jesus being our older brother.

In conclusion, I am not really sure, but, one thing is clear, God is our Father once we are born again ([Luke 11:2-4](#), [Isaiah 63:16](#)).

19.14 Blood

Because Jesus died for us and shed his blood for us, we can be cleansed by his blood (1 John 1:7), but we need to confess our sins (1 John 1:9) to God and/or Jesus.

Our parents and siblings are directly related to us because we share the same DNA, which also is the program that makes our blood and determines our blood type. Blood cells contain DNA.

<https://thesequencingcenter.com/knowledge-base/how-much-dna-is-contained-in-human-blood-cells/>

Perhaps when God cleanses us with the blood of Jesus, it also does something with Jesus' DNA and infuses it into us somehow? Regardless of DNA, we are still spiritual family with God and Jesus once we are saved, but this theory is interesting, and perhaps could explain how it happens. If there is some sort of DNA change in us when we are saved, it clearly isn't going to make us like God, or even an angel. We are still sinful humans after we are saved. But there might be a change in hereditary DNA that then links us to Jesus in that way.

Revelation 21:12 and Revelation 7:4 are hints that perhaps we will be assigned to one of the twelve tribes of Israel (the sons of Jacob are tribes) in the afterlife. If this is the case, maybe this DNA change (if it is true) will be done according to the tribe we are assigned to.

19.15 Joseph further compared

A few other similarities that Joseph (who was just a sinful human, but a symbolic prophesy with part of his life) had with Jesus are that Joseph was also tempted (but in different ways), he was betrayed by his brothers while Jesus was betrayed by his former apostle Judas, Joseph was the first-born when he ruled under pharaoh (Genesis 48:5-6, 22, 1 Chron 5:1-2), and probably other things.

Chapter 20 What Happened?

20.1 Can we just blame the Catholic Church?

Although the Catholic Church has had a major influence for centuries in changing the beliefs of Christians into doctrines that usually contradict what the Bible actually tells us to do or not do, we cannot put the blame fully on that church.

Many denominations, in more recent times, have also added, or changed many doctrines that are now common among Christianity.

20.2 Do we need to know a detailed history of the Church?

Simply put, no. However, learning the true history (not the propagandized versions) of the time since Jesus was here can help some people to better understand how everything got to this point, and how certain doctrines came into being. The important thing we do need to know, is that the 66 book Bible is what we need to read and believe, not the religious rules made by men.

20.3 What was the Reformation?

Before the 'Reformation' really started to gain momentum, the Roman Catholic Church (RCC) essentially ruled over most of Europe in religious, and even many non-religious matters, for more than a thousand years. People were getting sick of the corruption.

The 'Reformation' was essentially a religious revolution where the people tried to free themselves from religious

tyranny. They wanted freedom to practice the religion that they wanted to, if any. This 'revolution' is also what helped to spark the colonizations of the Americas, and other places, as people fled to more free places. Although Martin Luther was a major spark that helped start these 'revolts' against the Catholic Church, he was not the only one, and he was not the last.

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=6VK0p-tuuao> Luther: The Life and Legacy of the German Reformer

20.4 How did the RCC establish it's control over people?

The 'official' story is that popes were elected in succession with Peter being the first leader of the Church. This is simply not true that the popes had any direct connection to either James or Peter. The firsts apostles were independent, not part of any RCC or officially named Church. The popes came from conspiracies later on in history. Although the RCC has made up a list of 'popes' from the time of Peter, the first real evidence of any pope existing with the typical control of a 'bishop of bishops' was not until the 300's AD. The evidence shows that this is around the time that the RCC really began, but there were probably measures taken even in the 200's that laid the foundations. When Constantine converted to the ways of the RCC in 313AD, and then later in 380 AD the RCC faith was made the state religion of Rome, this essentially solidified the new power that the RCC had.

<https://www.quora.com/How-and-when-historically-did-Christianity-gain-political-power>

20.5 How did the RCC control people?

One of the main ways that the RCC controlled people, was by suppressing, controlling, hiding, or destroying any Biblical writing that was not written in latin. This is because

only the priests, high ranking members of the church, skilled students, some kings, and some nobles knew latin. In other words, the average person did not know latin, and so they had to rely on what the priests claimed that the Bible said. This is how the RCC was able to use false doctrines to control people for so long.

By making people think that they had to come to the pope (or his priests) to gain salvation and forgiveness for themselves and their families in order to avoid hell or purgatory, the RCC was able to make people continue to come to them while they made all of the rules up. People could be put to death, or wars could be started, all by the order of a pope. Any kingdom that refused to allow the pope access to their kingdom was at risk of being attacked, and the official reasons for the war could easily be fabricated if it was needed.

Chapter 21 Theories and Off-Topic

21.1 Will our pets be in heaven? And what about the babies?

Based on [Isaiah 11:6-10](#) I believe that animals will be in the Millennium on Earth with us. It says 'The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid; and the calf and the young lion and the fatling together; and a little child shall lead them. And the cow and the bear shall feed; their young ones shall lie down together: and the lion shall eat straw like the ox. And the sucking child shall play on the hole of the asp, and the weaned child shall put his hand on the cockatrice' den. They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my holy mountain: for the earth shall be full of the knowledge of the LORD, as the waters cover the sea. And in that day there shall be a root of Jesse, which shall stand for an ensign of the people; to it shall the Gentiles seek: and his rest shall be glorious.' It seems that even children will be with us there. Some of these animals could be our pets, as I don't see why God wouldn't resurrect them to be with us. The Bible does not specifically talk about our pets here in these verses though. Also, these children are probably aborted babies, and children who died of various reasons before they were old enough to understand what sin was, and if they wanted to choose God and Jesus or not. It is my theory that we will help these children grow up in the millennium, then they will have to either chose God or reject him.

21.2 Will animals help us when we flee into the 'wilderness'?

[Mark 1:13](#) says 'And he was there in the wilderness forty days, tempted of Satan; and was with the wild beasts; and the angels ministered unto him.' It seems clear that Jesus was at peace with the animals in the wilderness, but this verse is not completely clear. [Genesis 1:26](#) says 'And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth.' In [Genesis 9:2](#), after the flood, it says 'And the fear of you and the dread of you shall be upon every beast of the earth, and upon every fowl of the air, upon all that moveth *upon* the earth, and upon all the fishes of the sea; into your hand are they delivered.'

The animals already are cautious or afraid of us. I believe that God commanded them to obey us, as long as we act rightfully. In other words, if we respect the animals and do not show fear, but instead confidence, they will probably not try to hurt us. I have heard that sharks, for example, don't eat people. Instead, a shark might see a surfer and think its a sea lion or something similar, then after taking a nibble, the shark realizes it was a human and immediately stops the attack. I believe this is because the shark knows that God does not want it to eat people. If a shark really wanted to eat a person, they could easily. Have you ever heard of a shark completely eating a person? I haven't, I have only heard of bites.

The same thing can be said about bears. I have heard about bears killing people, but not eating them. In the case of bears and predators like them, they usually can sense fear. If a person is afraid, they can sense it, and it can drive the animal into a hunting mode, because predators have the instinct of dominating a rival who is afraid, in order to show that they are the alpha. Also, if humans run, this can put the predator into a hunting or alpha dominance mode. In theory, if a human calmly stands their ground, or backs away while facing the animal,

without fear, it should resolve any situation peacefully with a predator. If this fails, God can certainly do miracles for us to command the predator to leave us alone. In conclusion, I believe animals want to have peace with humans, but it is often the humans who surprise the animals, or mess with their babies, or so on, that makes the predator not able to think clearly, and go into an aggressive mode.

So even now, we can in theory have peace with predators, but I also believe that if we have to flee into the wilderness ever, that God will have the animals be at peace with us, or even help to bring us food like in [1 Kings 17:1-7](#).

21.3 Can animals “talk”?

Recent science has shown that there is neural tissue (brain like tissue) around the heart in humans. Doctors are not commonly told this in most colleges, because it does not go along with the pharmacy driven model that doctors must follow. However, some scientists have found and proven this tissue exists. Even the bible commonly says things about people saying something 'in their heart', or doing something with their 'whole heart'. Not only is there brain-types of tissue around our hearts, our hearts also generate a weak electric field around our bodies, extending a bit past our feet into the ground, and probably over our heads a bit. This is even why some people in some cultures like to have their feet bare while walking in the wilderness. It probably has something to do with electrical grounding. Another example of the brain matter around our hearts is the many documented cases of heart transplant recipients immediately feeling cravings or desires that the deceased donor had. For example, if a strong passion of a donor was running marathons, the recipient is likely to start having a strong desire to also compete in marathons.

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=LelkiUDS0yM> (2nd Brain Found in the Heart)

<https://www.heartmath.org/research/science-of-the-heart/energetic-communication/>

There are many documented cases of twins being able to read each others minds, or even groups of non-related women starting to be on the same cycles. There are documented cases of even non-relatives being able to 'read minds' of other people near them in a limited sense. I believe that these things occur because the electrical fields around our bodies that the heart generates is able to transfer emotions by electric signals, and perhaps even thoughts. These thoughts and emotions get picked up by the recipients electric field, and then processed in the heart of the recipient, which then sends the 'mind read' message to the recipient's brain.

I believe this is why dogs are so good at knowing what humans want them to do. For example, dogs can often learn to sit or roll over when we tell them to, without us actually having to push their bottom down, or having to physically move them into a rolling motion. I believe this is because the dogs can actually 'see' the image in our brain of us wanting 'picturing' them to roll over or sit. In these cases, the dog most likely does not recognize the word 'sit' or 'roll over' by its meaning, but can sense our desire for them to do these things. It is also why a dog might not come to us if they did something 'bad', because they can sense in our emotional energy, and the tone of our voice, that they are going to be corrected, even if we try to say it in a nice and enticing way.

Anyway, it could even be possible to send limited 'messages' and even 'images' to a dog or other animal by focusing on them and what we want to say in our minds to them. There are people who make lectures about this with even famous examples of people helping angry or abused animals to come to a more peaceful state, by 'asking' the animal what is wrong, and then 'listening' to them to find out how to help them. I do not know if this is true or just a new age type of doctrine, but it is clear to me that animals can at the very least sense our emotions, and probably even our intents (are we

peaceful, or hunting, etc?). Some lecturers even claim that they can talk to animals they cannot see (like on the other side of the planet), but this is probably fake, and is really just demons trying to fool people into thinking they can 'talk' to animals. Anyway, be careful, pray to God about this before trying to 'talk' to animals, so that you are not fooled by satan.

Cesar Millan explains how dogs can sense our energy in his book *Cesar's Way*. He has an amazing way with dogs and has rehabilitated many dogs that were thought to be lost causes. He explains how important it is to have the right attitude around dogs, what he calls “calm-assertive” energy. If our energy is unbalanced then our dog's energy will probably be unbalanced also.

There is clear evidence that once certain animals are given a way to “talk” to use, either by sign languages (like with monkeys) or pushing buttons (like with cats or dogs), these animals can use that method to communicate with us, and they can even understand what they are saying to us (most of us agree that animals can understand what we say sometimes). Billi the cat from the link below is an example of a cat using buttons to “talk” to her owner. Billi can combine two words to make a primitive but somewhat understandable “sentence”, like “food now”. She sometimes says when she is mad or happy, etc.

<https://www.youtube.com/@BilliSpeaks>

21.4 What about androids, robots, or supercomputers?

Hollywood often places stories in movies and shows that have content in them that will eventually be in public debate. Hollywood has even seemed to have aided the tobacco industry long ago by purposefully having seductive women in movies smoke cigarettes. This is just one example from history. Out of the many Hollywood ideas, one that I want to address here is if a robot or android or computer based design can

acquire a soul or not. Evolutionists would suggest there is no soul, and that the brain itself just brings sentience or consciousness due to its vast computational power, and so they would say that a robot could also become sentient if it had enough processing power. This is precisely what the movies and shows suggest, that all that is needed is enough processing power and then one magically becomes sentient and self-aware. This is simply not true.

A true computer scientist who knows how a computer works and how programs are written and processed, would know that no matter how long a program is, and how fast it can be processed, it is still a written program that must obey the code within the program. The program has no free will, and the program cannot choose its own choices. Any illusion of choice is done with random selections, derived from random number generations of 1's and 0's. Randomness by itself can never become a sentient choice, nor can it attain sentient self aware decision making processes. Try throwing a bunch of sticks in the air as high as you can, and do it a million times, the sticks will never land in a pattern that appears to be a square house with a roof and doors and windows.

Even if the human brain is nothing more than a biological computer, it would still bring us back to the problem that randomness cannot attain self-awareness or sentience. If our brains are biological computers, then what gives us sentience and self-awareness? It should be clear to us that it is the soul that is attached to the body that gives the person or animal sentience and self-awareness. When God made Adam out of the dust of the Earth, Adam did not have life until God breathed the breath of life into him ([Genesis 2:7](#)). In other words, just having a brain was not enough for Adam to be able to move around, he also needed the 'breath of Life' (a soul).

Can humans control when and how a soul is attached to a body? No. Only God can do this. Humans might be able to take drugs that allow out of body experiences (please don't do this, it is dangerous), but they are not able to attach or

disconnect the soul to or from a body. I believe that at some point after a person dies (perhaps 3 days, or less if God chooses), their soul does get detached from their body, but this is something that God is in control of. Humans cannot attach a soul to a robot, android, or computer, therefore a robot, android, or computer will never be truly sentient or self-aware.

Why am I writing about this topic? Because at some point in the near future, people will try to pretend (maybe they will actually believe it) that robots or other things can be sentient or self-aware. Then they will try to give these robots or other things certain rights. Once the entities get rights, they will be able to accuse humans of crimes, or sue them. I believe this will be part of Satan's plan to further divide and conquer our planet. It could also be used as a way to further confuse people about the afterlife, and salvation.

21.5 Will lions be herbivores again?

[Isaiah 11:7](#) says “And the cow and the bear shall feed; their young ones shall lie down together: and the lion shall eat straw like the ox.” I believe that this verse is referring to the Millennium of rest. Also, this verse mentions bears, so it is most likely that there will not be any animals eating other animals in the millennium. [Isaiah 65:25](#) says “The wolf and the lamb shall feed together, and the lion shall eat straw like the bullock: and dust *shall be* the serpent's meat. They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my holy mountain, saith the LORD.” Wolves, serpents, lambs, and once again, lions are mentioned in this verse. This brings up the questions of whether or not carnivorous animals have a different digestive system, and whether or not God will change their stomachs when he renews the Earth. [Isaiah 65:17](#) says “For, behold, I create new heavens and a new earth: and the former shall not be remembered, nor come into mind.” I suggest that you read all of chapter 65.

There are two types of herbivores, one that regurgitates its food and then “chews that cud” and swallows it, so that the

other parts of their stomach can finish it, and the type that doesn't regurgitate. Some of those that don't regurgitate eat their own droppings so that they can digest the now partially broken down cell walls and membranes of the food. Carnivores are designed with more powerful stomach acid to digest bones, cartilage, tendons, meat, and so forth, much easier than Herbivores could. Carnivores can really digest that stuff better than humans can digest meat. It can't be rotten meat though, unlike carnivores.

The digestive systems of carnivores and herbivores are very different. Lions probably could eat plants with their current digestive system but it would be very inefficient, they would have to eat often, and would probably get sick. The bodies of herbivores and carnivores are designed very differently. It seems most likely that God would redesign many things about lions and other carnivores, including their digestive systems.

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=sXj76A9hI-o>

While God could just have lions eat from the tree of life and that be all that they need, it seems more likely that herbivores will have to eat similar to how they do now.

21.6 Would there have been overpopulation before sin?

God commanded the animals and humans to be fruitful and multiply, before sin happened on Earth. Here is the commandment to the humans in [Genesis 1:28](#) “And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth.”

If humans never sinned, there would not have been death among humans and animals it seems. Humans were able to eat from the tree of life, and we have no reason to believe that the animals would have died as long as humans did not sin.

So, does that mean that the world would have gotten overpopulated?

First, the world would have to get very crowded before that would even start to become a problem. That probably would have taken more than a thousand years, I am guessing. Second, God could have made them barren at some point, or done other things to adjust the situation.

The probability that humans would sin before there was even a risk of overpopulation is so high that it was essentially guaranteed that humans would sin before it was a risk. I believe that God knew this beforehand, and knew that he would have to give his son as a sin offering so that we wouldn't have to die for our sins.

It could also be that no children would have been born until Adam and Eve sinned, and fully realized that they were naked. I wrote more about this topic in the Marriage chapter of this book. In that case though, the animals would have probably still multiplied, and so then there might have been animal overpopulation. But God could have made a solution for that issue too if it ever came up. God knew that Adam and Eve would sin though, and that overpopulation would not be a problem.

Chapter 22 Conclusions

22.1 What now?

Don't be overwhelmed by all of the difficult topics in this book, pray and ask God to lead you step by step into the things he wants to change in your life. Most of us cannot handle the stress of changing a bunch of things about our life at the same time, so try to take it all one topic at a time if you can.

22.2 Freely Given

I believe in giving out my books and eBooks for free.

[Matthew 10:7-10](#) says:

7 And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom of heaven is at hand.

8 Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils: freely ye have received, freely give.

9 Provide neither gold, nor silver, nor brass in your purses,

10 Nor scrip for your journey, neither two coats, neither shoes, nor yet staves: for the workman is worthy of his meat.

22.3 Legal matters

I declare this book to have the following copyright: once a person receives written and signed permission from me, physical copies can be made of this book by them as long as those copies are given away for free, and the people who make copies must not change my words, and must also say what edition it is a copy of. Digital copies of this book can be distributed without my permission so long as the people who make copies do not edit this book or the copies of it. This copyright applies to all previous printings and writings I have made of this book. You may not sell this digital or physical

book or any copies of them. If any copy is made of this book and that copy is sold then that is a violation of the copyright on this book (and a violation of the copyright of all editions and printings of this book). This book is not meant to be sold at any time, or anywhere. This book and copies of it may be given in return for gifts or donations no matter who is the current 'owner' or 'caretaker'. Freewill donations can be given to people who have given this book away, but the donation cannot be required to receive a book from the book holder. If anyone tries to require donations for this book to be given away than that is violating my copyright wishes for this book. [Proverbs 23:23](#)

כג אָמַת קִנָּה וְאַל-תִּמְכַּר חֵכְמָה וּמוֹסֵר וּבִינָה:

Buy truth, but do not sell *it*, also wisdom, instruction, and understanding. 22.23.23.651

22.4 My Contact Information

My current contact information as of writing this is:

my email is: my_path_of_life@yahoo.com

22.5 My other books

Another book of mine relating to this book is 'Word Occurrences', which lists each group (what I call a Root Family) by their common root, and then by their usage frequencies in the Bible. So, the most commonly used Root Family in the bible will be near the beginning of the book. The book is divided into 30 sections so that a person can review the words of each section each day of the month. A month of 29 days means you skip section 30, and a month of 31 days means you don't review any sections on day 31.

I have also written a Biblical Hebrew grammar book called 'Learning Hebrew from Genesis'. I also made a list (in book form) of Modern Hebrew words that are not in the Bible,

or are different than the words in the Bible. All of these books should be available where these other books of mine are also available.

My other related book is my 'Counting Roots' Biblical Hebrew dictionary. You can find my books in PDF form in the links below:

<https://learn-hebrew-from-genesis.weebly.com>

<http://self.gutenberg.org/Authors/Nesher>

שליים של הנוצרים

מאת
בנימין לי כפיר

הו מהדור

ליהוה וליהושע

